# HENRY IV Part 1 By WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

Edited by BARBARA A. MOWAT and PAUL WERSTINE

Folger Shakespeare Library

http://www.folgerdigitaltexts.org

### **Contents**

From the Director of the Folger Shakespeare

| Front<br>Matter | Library Textual Introduction Synopsis Characters in the Play |
|-----------------|--|
| ACT 1           | Scene 1<br>Scene 2<br>Scene 3                                |
| ACT 2           | Scene 1 Scene 2 Scene 3 Scene 4                              |
| ACT 3           | Scene 1<br>Scene 2<br>Scene 3                                |
| ACT 4           | Scene 1<br>Scene 2<br>Scene 3                                |

Scene 4

Scene 1 Scene 2

Scene 3 Scene 4 Scene 5

ACT 5

### From the Director of the Folger Shakespeare Library

It is hard to imagine a world without Shakespeare. Since their composition four hundred years ago, Shakespeare's plays and poems have traveled the globe, inviting those who see and read his works to make them their own.

Readers of the New Folger Editions are part of this ongoing process of "taking up Shakespeare," finding our own thoughts and feelings in language that strikes us as old or unusual and, for that very reason, new. We still struggle to keep up with a writer who could think a mile a minute, whose words paint pictures that shift like clouds. These expertly edited texts are presented to the public as a resource for study, artistic adaptation, and enjoyment. By making the classic texts of the New Folger Editions available in electronic form as Folger Digital Texts, we place a trusted resource in the hands of anyone who wants them.

The New Folger Editions of Shakespeare's plays, which are the basis for the texts realized here in digital form, are special because of their origin. The Folger Shakespeare Library in Washington, DC, is the single greatest documentary source of Shakespeare's works. An unparalleled collection of early modern books, manuscripts, and artwork connected to Shakespeare, the Folger's holdings have been consulted extensively in the preparation of these texts. The Editions also reflect the expertise gained through the regular performance of Shakespeare's works in the Folger's Elizabethan Theater.

I want to express my deep thanks to editors Barbara Mowat and Paul Werstine for creating these indispensable editions of Shakespeare's works, which incorporate the best of textual scholarship with a richness of commentary that is both inspired and engaging. Readers who want to know more about Shakespeare and his plays can follow the paths these distinguished scholars have tread by visiting the Folger either in-person or online, where a range of physical and digital resources exist to supplement the material in these texts. I commend to you these words, and hope that they inspire.

Michael Witmore Director, Folger Shakespeare Library

### Textual Introduction By Barbara Mowat and Paul Werstine

Until now, with the release of the Folger Digital Texts, readers in search of a free online text of Shakespeare's plays had to be content primarily with using the Moby<sup>TM</sup> Text, which reproduces a latenineteenth century version of the plays. What is the difference? Many ordinary readers assume that there is a single text for the plays: what Shakespeare wrote. But Shakespeare's plays were not published the way modern novels or plays are published today: as a single, authoritative text. In some cases, the plays have come down to us in multiple published versions, represented by various Quartos (Qq) and by the great collection put together by his colleagues in 1623, called the First Folio (F). There are, for example, three very different versions of Hamlet, two of King Lear, Henry V, Romeo and Juliet, and others. Editors choose which version to use as their base text, and then amend that text with words, lines or speech prefixes from the other versions that, in their judgment, make for a better or more accurate text.

Other editorial decisions involve choices about whether an unfamiliar word could be understood in light of other writings of the period or whether it should be changed; decisions about words that made it into Shakespeare's text by accident through four hundred years of printings and misprinting; and even decisions based on cultural preference and taste. When the Moby<sup>TM</sup> Text was created, for example, it was deemed "improper" and "indecent" for Miranda to chastise Caliban for having attempted to rape her. (See *The Tempest*, 1.2: "Abhorred slave,/Which any print of goodness wilt not take,/Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee..."). All Shakespeare editors at the time took the speech away from her and gave it to her father, Prospero.

The editors of the Moby<sup>TM</sup> Shakespeare produced their text long before scholars fully understood the proper grounds on which to make the thousands of decisions that Shakespeare editors face. The Folger Library Shakespeare Editions, on which the Folger Digital Texts depend, make this editorial process as nearly transparent as is possible, in contrast to older texts, like the Moby<sup>TM</sup>, which hide editorial interventions. The reader of the Folger Shakespeare knows where the text has been altered because editorial interventions are signaled by square brackets (for example, from *Othello*: "[If she in chains of magic were not bound,]"), half-square brackets (for example, from *Henry V*: "With <code>Fologood and sword and fire to win your</code>

right,"), or angle brackets (for example, from *Hamlet*: "O farewell, honest (soldier.) Who hath relieved/you?"). At any point in the text, you can hover your cursor over a bracket for more information.

Because the Folger Digital Texts are edited in accord with twenty-first century knowledge about Shakespeare's texts, the Folger here provides them to readers, scholars, teachers, actors, directors, and students, free of charge, confident of their quality as texts of the plays and pleased to be able to make this contribution to the study and enjoyment of Shakespeare.

### **Synopsis**

Henry IV, Part 1, culminates in the battle of Shrewsbury between the king's army and rebels seeking his crown. The dispute begins when Hotspur, the son of Northumberland, breaks with the king over the fate of his brother-in-law, Mortimer, a Welsh prisoner. Hotspur, Northumberland, and Hotspur's uncle Worcester plan to take the throne, later allying with Mortimer and a Welsh leader, Glendower.

As that conflict develops, Prince Hal—Henry IV's son and heir—carouses in a tavern and plots to trick the roguish Sir John Falstaff and his henchmen, who are planning a highway robbery. Hal and a companion will rob them of their loot—then wait for Falstaff's lying boasts. The trick succeeds, but Prince Hal is summoned to war.

In the war, Hal saves his father's life and then kills Hotspur, actions that help to redeem his bad reputation. Falstaff, meanwhile, cheats his soldiers, whom he leads to slaughter, and takes credit for Hotspur's death.

### **Characters in the Play**

KING HENRY IV, formerly Henry Bolingbroke

PRINCE HAL, Prince of Wales and heir to the throne (also called Harry and Harry Monmouth)

Lord John of Lancaster, younger son of King Henry Earl of Westmoreland
Sir Walter Blunt

Hotspur (Sir Henry, or Harry, Percy)
Lady Percy (also called Kate)

Earl of Northumberland, Henry Percy, Hotspur's father Earl of Worcester, Thomas Percy, Hotspur's uncle

EDMUND MORTIMER, earl of March
LADY MORTIMER (also called "the Welsh lady")
OWEN GLENDOWER, a Welsh lord, father of Lady Mortimer

Douglas (Archibald, earl of Douglas)
Archbishop (Richard Scroop, archbishop of York)
Sir Michael, a priest or knight associated with the archbishop
Sir Richard Vernon, an English knight

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF
POINS (also called Edward, Yedward, and Ned)
BARDOLPH
PETO
GADSHILL, setter for the robbers

Hostess of the tavern (also called Mistress Quickly) VINTNER, or keeper of the tavern Francis, an apprentice tapster

Carriers, Ostlers, Chamberlain, Travelers, Sheriff, Servants, Lords, Attendants, Messengers, Soldiers

### 「ACT 1

## Scene 1 Enter the King, Lord John of Lancaster, and the Earl of Westmoreland, with others.

#### KING

| FTLN 0001 | So shaken as we are, so wan with care,             |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 0002 | Find we a time for frighted peace to pant          |    |
| FTLN 0003 | And breathe short-winded accents of new broils     |    |
| FTLN 0004 | To be commenced in strands afar remote.            |    |
| FTLN 0005 | No more the thirsty entrance of this soil          | 5  |
| FTLN 0006 | Shall daub her lips with her own children's blood. |    |
| FTLN 0007 | No more shall trenching war channel her fields,    |    |
| FTLN 0008 | Nor bruise her flow'rets with the armèd hoofs      |    |
| FTLN 0009 | Of hostile paces. Those opposèd eyes,              |    |
| FTLN 0010 | Which, like the meteors of a troubled heaven,      | 10 |
| FTLN 0011 | All of one nature, of one substance bred,          |    |
| FTLN 0012 | Did lately meet in the intestine shock             |    |
| FTLN 0013 | And furious close of civil butchery,               |    |
| FTLN 0014 | Shall now, in mutual well-beseeming ranks,         |    |
| FTLN 0015 | March all one way and be no more opposed           | 15 |
| FTLN 0016 | Against acquaintance, kindred, and allies.         |    |
| FTLN 0017 | The edge of war, like an ill-sheathèd knife,       |    |
| FTLN 0018 | No more shall cut his master. Therefore, friends,  |    |
| FTLN 0019 | As far as to the sepulcher of Christ—              |    |
| FTLN 0020 | Whose soldier now, under whose blessèd cross       | 20 |
| FTLN 0021 | We are impressed and engaged to fight—             |    |

| FTLN 0022 | Forthwith a power of English shall we levy,    |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 0023 | Whose arms were molded in their mothers' womb  |    |
| FTLN 0024 | To chase these pagans in those holy fields     |    |
| FTLN 0025 | Over whose acres walked those blessèd feet     | 25 |
| FTLN 0026 | Which fourteen hundred years ago were nailed   |    |
| FTLN 0027 | For our advantage on the bitter cross.         |    |
| FTLN 0028 | But this our purpose now is twelve month old,  |    |
| FTLN 0029 | And bootless 'tis to tell you we will go.      |    |
| FTLN 0030 | Therefor we meet not now. Then let me hear     | 30 |
| FTLN 0031 | Of you, my gentle cousin Westmoreland,         |    |
| FTLN 0032 | What yesternight our council did decree        |    |
| FTLN 0033 | In forwarding this dear expedience.            |    |
|           | WESTMORELAND                                   |    |
| FTLN 0034 | My liege, this haste was hot in question,      |    |
| FTLN 0035 | And many limits of the charge set down         | 35 |
| FTLN 0036 | But yesternight, when all athwart there came   |    |
| FTLN 0037 | A post from Wales loaden with heavy news,      |    |
| FTLN 0038 | Whose worst was that the noble Mortimer,       |    |
| FTLN 0039 | Leading the men of Herefordshire to fight      |    |
| FTLN 0040 | Against the irregular and wild Glendower,      | 40 |
| FTLN 0041 | Was by the rude hands of that Welshman taken,  |    |
| FTLN 0042 | A thousand of his people butcherèd,            |    |
| FTLN 0043 | Upon whose dead corpse there was such misuse,  |    |
| FTLN 0044 | Such beastly shameless transformation          |    |
| FTLN 0045 | By those Welshwomen done, as may not be        | 45 |
| FTLN 0046 | Without much shame retold or spoken of.        |    |
|           | KING   |    |
| FTLN 0047 | It seems then that the tidings of this broil   |    |
| FTLN 0048 | Brake off our business for the Holy Land.      |    |
|           | WESTMORELAND                                   |    |
| FTLN 0049 | This matched with other did, my gracious lord. |    |
| FTLN 0050 | For more uneven and unwelcome news             | 50 |
| FTLN 0051 | Came from the north, and thus it did import:   |    |
| FTLN 0052 | On Holy-rood Day the gallant Hotspur there,    |    |
| FTLN 0053 | Young Harry Percy, and brave Archibald,        |    |
| FTLN 0054 | That ever valiant and approved Scot,           |    |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 0055 | At Holmedon met, where they did spend                | 55 |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 0056 | A sad and bloody hour—                               |    |
| FTLN 0057 | As by discharge of their artillery                   |    |
| FTLN 0058 | And shape of likelihood the news was told,           |    |
| FTLN 0059 | For he that brought them, in the very heat           |    |
| FTLN 0060 | And pride of their contention did take horse,        | 60 |
| FTLN 0061 | Uncertain of the issue any way.                      |    |
|           | KING   |    |
| FTLN 0062 | Here is a dear, a true-industrious friend,           |    |
| FTLN 0063 | Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his horse,        |    |
| FTLN 0064 | Stained with the variation of each soil              |    |
| FTLN 0065 | Betwixt that Holmedon and this seat of ours,         | 65 |
| FTLN 0066 | And he hath brought us smooth and welcome news.      |    |
| FTLN 0067 | The Earl of Douglas is discomfited;                  |    |
| FTLN 0068 | Ten thousand bold Scots, two-and-twenty knights,     |    |
| FTLN 0069 | Balked in their own blood, did Sir Walter see        |    |
| FTLN 0070 | On Holmedon's plains. Of prisoners Hotspur took      | 70 |
| FTLN 0071 | Mordake, Earl of Fife and eldest son                 |    |
| FTLN 0072 | To beaten Douglas, and the Earl of Atholl,           |    |
| FTLN 0073 | Of Murray, Angus, and Menteith.                      |    |
| FTLN 0074 | And is not this an honorable spoil?                  |    |
| FTLN 0075 | A gallant prize? Ha, cousin, is it not?              | 75 |
|           | WESTMORELAND   |    |
| FTLN 0076 | In faith, it is a conquest for a prince to boast of. |    |
|           | KING   |    |
| FTLN 0077 | Yea, there thou mak'st me sad, and mak'st me sin     |    |
| FTLN 0078 | In envy that my Lord Northumberland                  |    |
| FTLN 0079 | Should be the father to so blest a son,              |    |
| FTLN 0080 | A son who is the theme of Honor's tongue,            | 80 |
| FTLN 0081 | Amongst a grove the very straightest plant,          |    |
| FTLN 0082 | Who is sweet Fortune's minion and her pride;         |    |
| FTLN 0083 | Whilst I, by looking on the praise of him,           |    |
| FTLN 0084 | See riot and dishonor stain the brow                 |    |
| FTLN 0085 | Of my young Harry. O, that it could be proved        | 85 |
| FTLN 0086 | That some night-tripping fairy had exchanged         |    |
| FTLN 0087 | In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,       |    |

| FTLN 0088 | And called mine "Percy," his "Plantagenet"!        |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0089 | Then would I have his Harry, and he mine.          |     |
| FTLN 0090 | But let him from my thoughts. What think you, coz, | 90  |
| FTLN 0091 | Of this young Percy's pride? The prisoners         |     |
| FTLN 0092 | Which he in this adventure hath surprised          |     |
| FTLN 0093 | To his own use he keeps, and sends me word         |     |
| FTLN 0094 | I shall have none but Mordake, Earl of Fife.       |     |
|           | WESTMORELAND                                       |     |
| FTLN 0095 | This is his uncle's teaching. This is Worcester,   | 95  |
| FTLN 0096 | Malevolent to you in all aspects,                  |     |
| FTLN 0097 | Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up      |     |
| FTLN 0098 | The crest of youth against your dignity.           |     |
|           | KING   |     |
| FTLN 0099 | But I have sent for him to answer this.            |     |
| FTLN 0100 | And for this cause awhile we must neglect          | 100 |
| FTLN 0101 | Our holy purpose to Jerusalem.                     |     |
| FTLN 0102 | Cousin, on Wednesday next our council we           |     |
| FTLN 0103 | Will hold at Windsor. So inform the lords.         |     |
| FTLN 0104 | But come yourself with speed to us again,          |     |
| FTLN 0105 | For more is to be said and to be done              | 105 |
| FTLN 0106 | Than out of anger can be utterèd.                  |     |
| FTLN 0107 | WESTMORELAND I will, my liege.                     |     |
|           | They exit.   |     |

They exit.

「Scene 2<sup>¬</sup> Enter Prince of Wales, and Sir John Falstaff.

| FTLN 0108 | FALSTAFF Now, Hal, what time of day is it, lad?    |   |
|-----------|--|---|
| FTLN 0109 | PRINCE Thou art so fat-witted with drinking of old |   |
| FTLN 0110 | sack, and unbuttoning thee after supper, and       |   |
| FTLN 0111 | sleeping upon benches after noon, that thou hast   |   |
| FTLN 0112 | forgotten to demand that truly which thou wouldst  | 5 |
| FTLN 0113 | truly know. What a devil hast thou to do with      |   |
| FTLN 0114 | the time of the day? Unless hours were cups of     |   |
| FTLN 0115 | sack, and minutes capons, and clocks the tongues   |   |

| FTLN 0116 | of bawds, and dials the signs of leaping-houses,        |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 0117 | and the blessed sun himself a fair hot wench in         | 10 |
| FTLN 0118 | flame-colored taffeta, I see no reason why thou         | 10 |
| FTLN 0119 | shouldst be so superfluous to demand the time           |    |
| FTLN 0120 | of the day.   |    |
| FTLN 0121 | FALSTAFF Indeed, you come near me now, Hal, for we      |    |
| FTLN 0122 | that take purses go by the moon and the seven           | 15 |
| FTLN 0123 | stars, and not by Phoebus, he, that wand'ring           | 10 |
| FTLN 0124 | knight so fair. And I prithee, sweet wag, when thou     |    |
| FTLN 0125 | art king, as God save thy Grace—Majesty, I should       |    |
| FTLN 0126 | say, for grace thou wilt have none—                     |    |
| FTLN 0127 | PRINCE What, none?                                      | 20 |
| FTLN 0128 | FALSTAFF No, by my troth, not so much as will serve to  | 20 |
| FTLN 0129 | be prologue to an egg and butter.                       |    |
| FTLN 0130 | PRINCE Well, how then? Come, roundly, roundly.          |    |
| FTLN 0131 | FALSTAFF Marry then, sweet wag, when thou art king,     |    |
| FTLN 0132 | let not us that are squires of the night's body be      | 25 |
| FTLN 0133 | called thieves of the day's beauty. Let us be Diana's   |    |
| FTLN 0134 | foresters, gentlemen of the shade, minions of the       |    |
| FTLN 0135 | moon, and let men say we be men of good government,     |    |
| FTLN 0136 | being governed, as the sea is, by our noble             |    |
| FTLN 0137 | and chaste mistress the moon, under whose countenance   | 30 |
| FTLN 0138 | we steal.   |    |
| FTLN 0139 | PRINCE Thou sayest well, and it holds well too, for the |    |
| FTLN 0140 | fortune of us that are the moon's men doth ebb and      |    |
| FTLN 0141 | flow like the sea, being governed, as the sea is, by    |    |
| FTLN 0142 | the moon. As for proof now: a purse of gold most        | 35 |
| FTLN 0143 | resolutely snatched on Monday night and most            |    |
| FTLN 0144 | dissolutely spent on Tuesday morning, got with          |    |
| FTLN 0145 | swearing "Lay by" and spent with crying "Bring          |    |
| FTLN 0146 | in"; now in as low an ebb as the foot of the ladder,    |    |
| FTLN 0147 | and by and by in as high a flow as the ridge of the     | 40 |
| FTLN 0148 | gallows.  |    |
| FTLN 0149 | FALSTAFF By the Lord, thou sayst true, lad. And is not  |    |
| FTLN 0150 | my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench?            |    |

| FTLN 0151 | PRINCE As the honey of Hybla, my old lad of the castle.   |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 0152 | And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet robe of             | 45 |
| FTLN 0153 | durance?  |    |
| FTLN 0154 | FALSTAFF How now, how now, mad wag? What, in thy          |    |
| FTLN 0155 | quips and thy quiddities? What a plague have I to         |    |
| FTLN 0156 | do with a buff jerkin?                                    |    |
| FTLN 0157 | PRINCE Why, what a pox have I to do with my hostess       | 50 |
| FTLN 0158 | of the tavern?  |    |
| FTLN 0159 | FALSTAFF Well, thou hast called her to a reckoning        |    |
| FTLN 0160 | many a time and oft.                                      |    |
| FTLN 0161 | PRINCE Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part?          |    |
| FTLN 0162 | FALSTAFF No, I'll give thee thy due. Thou hast paid all   | 55 |
| FTLN 0163 | there.  |    |
| FTLN 0164 | PRINCE Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my coin would        |    |
| FTLN 0165 | stretch, and where it would not, I have used my           |    |
| FTLN 0166 | credit.   |    |
| FTLN 0167 | FALSTAFF Yea, and so used it that were it not here        | 60 |
| FTLN 0168 | apparent that thou art heir apparent—But I prithee,       |    |
| FTLN 0169 | sweet wag, shall there be gallows standing in             |    |
| FTLN 0170 | England when thou art king? And resolution thus           |    |
| FTLN 0171 | fubbed as it is with the rusty curb of old father Antic   |    |
| FTLN 0172 | the law? Do not thou, when thou art king, hang a          | 65 |
| FTLN 0173 | thief.  |    |
| FTLN 0174 | PRINCE No, thou shalt.                                    |    |
| FTLN 0175 | FALSTAFF Shall I? O rare! By the Lord, I'll be a brave    |    |
| FTLN 0176 | judge.  |    |
| FTLN 0177 | PRINCE Thou judgest false already. I mean thou shalt      | 70 |
| FTLN 0178 | have the hanging of the thieves, and so become a          |    |
| FTLN 0179 | rare hangman.   |    |
| FTLN 0180 | FALSTAFF Well, Hal, well, and in some sort it jumps       |    |
| FTLN 0181 | with my humor as well as waiting in the court, I          |    |
| FTLN 0182 | can tell you.   | 75 |
| FTLN 0183 | PRINCE For obtaining of suits?                            |    |
| FTLN 0184 | FALSTAFF Yea, for obtaining of suits, whereof the hangman |    |
| FTLN 0185 | hath no lean wardrobe. 'Sblood, I am as                   |    |
| FTLN 0186 | melancholy as a gib cat or a lugged bear.                 |    |
|           | ,                   |    |

| FTLN 0187 | PRINCE Or an old lion, or a lover's lute.             | 80  |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0188 | FALSTAFF Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe. |     |
| FTLN 0189 | PRINCE What sayest thou to a hare, or the melancholy  |     |
| FTLN 0190 | of Moorditch?   |     |
| FTLN 0191 | FALSTAFF Thou hast the most unsavory similes, and     |     |
| FTLN 0192 | art indeed the most comparative, rascaliest, sweet    | 85  |
| FTLN 0193 | young prince. But, Hal, I prithee trouble me no       |     |
| FTLN 0194 | more with vanity. I would to God thou and I knew      |     |
| FTLN 0195 | where a commodity of good names were to be            |     |
| FTLN 0196 | bought. An old lord of the council rated me the       |     |
| FTLN 0197 | other day in the street about you, sir, but I marked  | 90  |
| FTLN 0198 | him not, and yet he talked very wisely, but I         |     |
| FTLN 0199 | regarded him not, and yet he talked wisely, and in    |     |
| FTLN 0200 | the street, too.                                      |     |
| FTLN 0201 | PRINCE Thou didst well, for wisdom cries out in the   |     |
| FTLN 0202 | streets and no man regards it.                        | 95  |
| FTLN 0203 | FALSTAFF O, thou hast damnable iteration, and art     |     |
| FTLN 0204 | indeed able to corrupt a saint. Thou hast done        |     |
| FTLN 0205 | much harm upon me, Hal, God forgive thee for it.      |     |
| FTLN 0206 | Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing, and now      |     |
| FTLN 0207 | am I, if a man should speak truly, little better than | 100 |
| FTLN 0208 | one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I  |     |
| FTLN 0209 | will give it over. By the Lord, an I do not, I am a   |     |
| FTLN 0210 | villain. I'll be damned for never a king's son in     |     |
| FTLN 0211 | Christendom.  |     |
| FTLN 0212 | PRINCE Where shall we take a purse tomorrow, Jack?    | 105 |
| FTLN 0213 | FALSTAFF Zounds, where thou wilt, lad. I'll make one. |     |
| FTLN 0214 | An I do not, call me villain and baffle me.           |     |
| FTLN 0215 | PRINCE I see a good amendment of life in thee, from   |     |
| FTLN 0216 | praying to purse-taking.                              |     |
| FTLN 0217 | FALSTAFF Why, Hal, 'tis my vocation, Hal. 'Tis no sin | 110 |
| FTLN 0218 | for a man to labor in his vocation.                   |     |
|           |   |     |

#### Enter Poins.

FTLN 0219 Poins!—Now shall we know if Gadshill have set a match. O, if men were to be saved by merit, what

| FTLN 0221 | hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the          |      |
|-----------|--|------|
| FTLN 0222 | most omnipotent villain that ever cried "Stand!" to        | 115  |
| FTLN 0223 | a true man.  |      |
| FTLN 0224 | PRINCE Good morrow, Ned.                                   |      |
| FTLN 0225 | POINS Good morrow, sweet Hal.—What says Monsieur           |      |
| FTLN 0226 | Remorse? What says Sir John Sack-and-Sugar?                |      |
| FTLN 0227 | Jack, how agrees the devil and thee about                  | 120  |
| FTLN 0228 | thy soul that thou soldest him on Good Friday last         |      |
| FTLN 0229 | for a cup of Madeira and a cold capon's leg?               |      |
| FTLN 0230 | PRINCE Sir John stands to his word. The devil shall        |      |
| FTLN 0231 | have his bargain, for he was never yet a breaker of        |      |
| FTLN 0232 | proverbs. He will give the devil his due.                  | 125  |
| FTLN 0233 | POINS, <i>to Falstaff</i> Then art thou damned for keeping |      |
| FTLN 0234 | thy word with the devil.                                   |      |
| FTLN 0235 | PRINCE Else he had been damned for cozening the            |      |
| FTLN 0236 | devil.   |      |
| FTLN 0237 | POINS But, my lads, my lads, tomorrow morning, by          | 130  |
| FTLN 0238 | four o'clock early at Gad's Hill, there are pilgrims       |      |
| FTLN 0239 | going to Canterbury with rich offerings, and traders       |      |
| FTLN 0240 | riding to London with fat purses. I have vizards for       |      |
| FTLN 0241 | you all. You have horses for yourselves. Gadshill lies     |      |
| FTLN 0242 | tonight in Rochester. I have bespoke supper tomorrow       | 135  |
| FTLN 0243 | night in Eastcheap. We may do it as secure as              |      |
| FTLN 0244 | sleep. If you will go, I will stuff your purses full of    |      |
| FTLN 0245 | crowns. If you will not, tarry at home and be              |      |
| FTLN 0246 | hanged.  |      |
| FTLN 0247 | FALSTAFF Hear you, Yedward, if I tarry at home and         | 140  |
| FTLN 0248 | go not, I'll hang you for going.                           |      |
| FTLN 0249 | POINS You will, chops?                                     |      |
| FTLN 0250 | FALSTAFF Hal, wilt thou make one?                          |      |
| FTLN 0251 | PRINCE Who, I rob? I a thief? Not I, by my faith.          | 4.4- |
| FTLN 0252 | FALSTAFF There's neither honesty, manhood, nor             | 145  |
| FTLN 0253 | good fellowship in thee, nor thou cam'st not of            |      |
| FTLN 0254 | the blood royal, if thou darest not stand for ten          |      |
| FTLN 0255 | shillings.   |      |
| FTLN 0256 | PRINCE Well then, once in my days I'll be a madcap.        | 1.50 |
| FTLN 0257 | FALSTAFF Why, that's well said.                            | 150  |

| FTLN 0258 | PRINCE Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home.          |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0259 | FALSTAFF By the Lord, I'll be a traitor then when thou    |     |
| FTLN 0260 | art king.   |     |
| FTLN 0261 | PRINCE I care not.  |     |
| FTLN 0262 | POINS Sir John, I prithee leave the Prince and me         | 155 |
| FTLN 0263 | alone. I will lay him down such reasons for this          |     |
| FTLN 0264 | adventure that he shall go.                               |     |
| FTLN 0265 | FALSTAFF Well, God give thee the spirit of persuasion,    |     |
| FTLN 0266 | and him the ears of profiting, that what thou             |     |
| FTLN 0267 | speakest may move, and what he hears may be               | 160 |
| FTLN 0268 | believed, that the true prince may, for recreation        |     |
| FTLN 0269 | sake, prove a false thief, for the poor abuses of the     |     |
| FTLN 0270 | time want countenance. Farewell. You shall find me        |     |
| FTLN 0271 | in Eastcheap.   |     |
| FTLN 0272 | PRINCE Farewell, thou latter spring. Farewell, Allhallown | 165 |
| FTLN 0273 | summer. \tag{Falstaff exits.}                             |     |
| FTLN 0274 | POINS Now, my good sweet honey lord, ride with us         |     |
| FTLN 0275 | tomorrow. I have a jest to execute that I cannot          |     |
| FTLN 0276 | manage alone. Falstaff, Peto, Bardolph, and Gadshill      |     |
| FTLN 0277 | shall rob those men that we have already                  | 170 |
| FTLN 0278 | waylaid. Yourself and I will not be there. And when       |     |
| FTLN 0279 | they have the booty, if you and I do not rob them,        |     |
| FTLN 0280 | cut this head off from my shoulders.                      |     |
| FTLN 0281 | PRINCE How shall we part with them in setting forth?      |     |
| FTLN 0282 | POINS Why, we will set forth before or after them, and    | 175 |
| FTLN 0283 | appoint them a place of meeting, wherein it is at our     |     |
| FTLN 0284 | pleasure to fail; and then will they adventure upon       |     |
| FTLN 0285 | the exploit themselves, which they shall have no          |     |
| FTLN 0286 | sooner achieved but we'll set upon them.                  | 100 |
| FTLN 0287 | PRINCE Yea, but 'tis like that they will know us by our   | 180 |
| FTLN 0288 | horses, by our habits, and by every other appointment     |     |
| FTLN 0289 | to be ourselves.  |     |
| FTLN 0290 | POINS Tut, our horses they shall not see; I'll tie them   |     |
| FTLN 0291 | in the wood. Our vizards we will change after we          | 105 |
| FTLN 0292 | leave them. And, sirrah, I have cases of buckram          | 185 |
| FTLN 0293 | for the nonce, to immask our noted outward                |     |
| FTLN 0294 | garments.   |     |

| TTT 11 0 0 0 0 | DDDICE V look I doubt the contill had a bound for one |     |
|----------------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0295      | PRINCE Yea, but I doubt they will be too hard for us. |     |
| FTLN 0296      | POINS Well, for two of them, I know them to be as     | 100 |
| FTLN 0297      | true-bred cowards as ever turned back; and for the    | 190 |
| FTLN 0298      | third, if he fight longer than he sees reason, I'll   |     |
| FTLN 0299      | forswear arms. The virtue of this jest will be the    |     |
| FTLN 0300      | incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will   |     |
| FTLN 0301      | tell us when we meet at supper: how thirty at least   |     |
| FTLN 0302      | he fought with, what wards, what blows, what          | 195 |
| FTLN 0303      | extremities he endured; and in the reproof of this    |     |
| FTLN 0304      | lives the jest.                                       |     |
| FTLN 0305      | PRINCE Well, I'll go with thee. Provide us all things |     |
| FTLN 0306      | necessary and meet me tomorrow night in Eastcheap.    |     |
| FTLN 0307      | There I'll sup. Farewell.                             | 200 |
| FTLN 0308      | POINS Farewell, my lord. Poins exits.                 |     |
|                | PRINCE  |     |
| FTLN 0309      | I know you all, and will awhile uphold                |     |
| FTLN 0310      | The unyoked humor of your idleness.                   |     |
| FTLN 0311      | Yet herein will I imitate the sun,                    |     |
| FTLN 0312      | Who doth permit the base contagious clouds            | 205 |
| FTLN 0313      | To smother up his beauty from the world,              |     |
| FTLN 0314      | That, when he please again to be himself,             |     |
| FTLN 0315      | Being wanted, he may be more wondered at              |     |
| FTLN 0316      | By breaking through the foul and ugly mists           |     |
| FTLN 0317      | Of vapors that did seem to strangle him.              | 210 |
| FTLN 0318      | If all the year were playing holidays,                |     |
| FTLN 0319      | To sport would be as tedious as to work,              |     |
| FTLN 0320      | But when they seldom come, they wished-for come,      |     |
| FTLN 0321      | And nothing pleaseth but rare accidents.              |     |
| FTLN 0322      | So when this loose behavior I throw off               | 215 |
| FTLN 0323      | And pay the debt I never promised,                    |     |
| FTLN 0324      | By how much better than my word I am,                 |     |
| FTLN 0325      | By so much shall I falsify men's hopes;               |     |
| FTLN 0326      | And, like bright metal on a sullen ground,            |     |
| FTLN 0327      | My reformation, glitt'ring o'er my fault,             | 220 |
| FTLN 0328      | Shall show more goodly and attract more eyes          |     |
| FTLN 0329      | Than that which hath no foil to set it off.           |     |

I'll so offend to make offense a skill,

FTLN 0331 Redeeming time when men think least I will.

He exits.

### Scene 3 Enter the King, Northumberland, Worcester, Hotspur, fand Sir Walter Blunt, with others.

|           | KING, <sup>「</sup> to Northumberland, Worcester, and Hotspur <sup>¬</sup> |        |
|-----------|---|--------|
| FTLN 0332 | My blood hath been too cold and temperate,                                |        |
| FTLN 0333 | Unapt to stir at these indignities,                                       |        |
| FTLN 0334 | And you have found me, for accordingly                                    |        |
| FTLN 0335 | You tread upon my patience. But be sure                                   |        |
| FTLN 0336 | I will from henceforth rather be myself,                                  | 5      |
| FTLN 0337 | Mighty and to be feared, than my condition,                               |        |
| FTLN 0338 | Which hath been smooth as oil, soft as young down,                        |        |
| FTLN 0339 | And therefore lost that title of respect                                  |        |
| FTLN 0340 | Which the proud soul ne'er pays but to the proud.                         |        |
|           | WORCESTER   |        |
| FTLN 0341 | Our house, my sovereign liege, little deserves                            | 10     |
| FTLN 0342 | The scourge of greatness to be used on it,                                |        |
| FTLN 0343 | And that same greatness too which our own hands                           |        |
| FTLN 0344 | Have holp to make so portly.  |        |
| FTLN 0345 | NORTHUMBERLAND My lord—   |        |
|           | KING  |        |
| FTLN 0346 | Worcester, get thee gone, for I do see                                    | 15     |
| FTLN 0347 | Danger and disobedience in thine eye.                                     |        |
| FTLN 0348 | O sir, your presence is too bold and peremptory,                          |        |
| FTLN 0349 | And majesty might never yet endure  |        |
| FTLN 0350 | The moody frontier of a servant brow.                                     |        |
| FTLN 0351 | You have good leave to leave us. When we need                             | 20     |
| FTLN 0352 | Your use and counsel, we shall send for you.                              |        |
|           | Worcester e   | exits. |
| FTLN 0353 | You were about to speak.  |        |
| FTLN 0354 | NORTHUMBERLAND Yea, my good lord.   |        |

| ETI N 0255             | Those prisoners in your Highness' name demanded   |    |
|------------------------|---|----|
| FTLN 0355<br>FTLN 0356 | Those prisoners in your Highness' name demanded, Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took, | 25 |
|                        |   | 23 |
| FTLN 0357              | Were, as he says, not with such strength denied As is delivered to your Majesty.          |    |
| FTLN 0358              |   |    |
| FTLN 0359              | Either envy, therefore, or misprision   |    |
| FTLN 0360              | Is guilty of this fault, and not my son.  |    |
| TTT 11 00 64           | HOTSPUR   | 20 |
| FTLN 0361              | My liege, I did deny no prisoners.  | 30 |
| FTLN 0362              | But I remember, when the fight was done,  |    |
| FTLN 0363              | When I was dry with rage and extreme toil,  |    |
| FTLN 0364              | Breathless and faint, leaning upon my sword,  |    |
| FTLN 0365              | Came there a certain lord, neat and trimly dressed,                                       |    |
| FTLN 0366              | Fresh as a bridegroom, and his chin new reaped  | 35 |
| FTLN 0367              | Showed like a stubble land at harvest home.   |    |
| FTLN 0368              | He was perfumèd like a milliner,  |    |
| FTLN 0369              | And 'twixt his finger and his thumb he held   |    |
| FTLN 0370              | A pouncet box, which ever and anon  |    |
| FTLN 0371              | He gave his nose and took 't away again,  | 40 |
| FTLN 0372              | Who therewith angry, when it next came there,   |    |
| FTLN 0373              | Took it in snuff; and still he smiled and talked.   |    |
| FTLN 0374              | And as the soldiers bore dead bodies by,  |    |
| FTLN 0375              | He called them untaught knaves, unmannerly,   |    |
| FTLN 0376              | To bring a slovenly unhandsome corse  | 45 |
| FTLN 0377              | Betwixt the wind and his nobility.  |    |
| FTLN 0378              | With many holiday and lady terms  |    |
| FTLN 0379              | He questioned me, amongst the rest demanded   |    |
| FTLN 0380              | My prisoners in your Majesty's behalf.  |    |
| FTLN 0381              | I then, all smarting with my wounds being cold,   | 50 |
| FTLN 0382              | To be so pestered with a popinjay,  |    |
| FTLN 0383              | Out of my grief and my impatience   |    |
| FTLN 0384              | Answered neglectingly I know not what—  |    |
| FTLN 0385              | He should, or he should not; for he made me mad   |    |
| FTLN 0386              | To see him shine so brisk and smell so sweet  | 55 |
| FTLN 0387              | And talk so like a waiting-gentlewoman  |    |
| FTLN 0388              | Of guns, and drums, and wounds—God save the   |    |
| FTLN 0389              | mark!—  |    |
|                        |   |    |

|           | A 1711' d ' 741' E d   |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0390 | And telling me the sovereignest thing on Earth   | (0) |
| FTLN 0391 | Was parmacety for an inward bruise,  | 60  |
| FTLN 0392 | And that it was great pity, so it was,   |     |
| FTLN 0393 | This villainous saltpeter should be digged   |     |
| FTLN 0394 | Out of the bowels of the harmless Earth,   |     |
| FTLN 0395 | Which many a good tall fellow had destroyed  |     |
| FTLN 0396 | So cowardly, and but for these vile guns   | 65  |
| FTLN 0397 | He would himself have been a soldier.  |     |
| FTLN 0398 | This bald unjointed chat of his, my lord,  |     |
| FTLN 0399 | I answered indirectly, as I said,  |     |
| FTLN 0400 | And I beseech you, let not his report  |     |
| FTLN 0401 | Come current for an accusation   | 70  |
| FTLN 0402 | Betwixt my love and your high Majesty.   |     |
|           | BLUNT  |     |
| FTLN 0403 | The circumstance considered, good my lord,   |     |
| FTLN 0404 | Whate'er Lord Harry Percy then had said  |     |
| FTLN 0405 | To such a person and in such a place,  |     |
| FTLN 0406 | At such a time, with all the rest retold,  | 75  |
| FTLN 0407 | May reasonably die and never rise  |     |
| FTLN 0408 | To do him wrong or any way impeach   |     |
| FTLN 0409 | What then he said, so he unsay it now.   |     |
|           | KING   |     |
| FTLN 0410 | Why, yet he doth deny his prisoners,   |     |
| FTLN 0411 | But with proviso and exception   | 80  |
| FTLN 0412 | That we at our own charge shall ransom straight  |     |
| FTLN 0413 | His brother-in-law, the foolish Mortimer,  |     |
| FTLN 0414 | Who, on my soul, hath willfully betrayed   |     |
| FTLN 0415 | The lives of those that he did lead to fight   |     |
| FTLN 0416 | Against that great magician, damned Glendower,   | 85  |
| FTLN 0417 | Whose daughter, as we hear, that Earl of March   |     |
| FTLN 0418 | Hath lately married. Shall our coffers then  |     |
| FTLN 0419 | Be emptied to redeem a traitor home?   |     |
| FTLN 0420 | Shall we buy treason and indent with fears   |     |
| FTLN 0421 | When they have lost and forfeited themselves?  | 90  |
| FTLN 0422 | No, on the barren mountains let him starve,  |     |
| FTLN 0423 | For I shall never hold that man my friend  |     |
|           | , and the second se |     |

| FTLN 0424              | Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost   |     |
|------------------------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0424<br>FTLN 0425 | To ransom home revolted Mortimer.  |     |
| FTLN 0425<br>FTLN 0426 | HOTSPUR Revolted Mortimer!   | 95  |
| FTLN 0420<br>FTLN 0427 | He never did fall off, my sovereign liege,   | 93  |
| FTLN 0427              | But by the chance of war. To prove that true   |     |
| FTLN 0428<br>FTLN 0429 | Needs no more but one tongue for all those wounds,   |     |
| FTLN 0429<br>FTLN 0430 | Those mouthed wounds, which valiantly he took  |     |
| FTLN 0430              | When on the gentle Severn's sedgy bank   | 100 |
|                        | In single opposition hand to hand  | 100 |
| FTLN 0432<br>FTLN 0433 | He did confound the best part of an hour   |     |
|                        |  |     |
| FTLN 0434              | In changing hardiment with great Glendower.  Three times they breathed, and three times did they |     |
| FTLN 0435              | Three times they breathed, and three times did they  | 105 |
| FTLN 0436              | drink,   | 105 |
| FTLN 0437              | Upon agreement, of swift Severn's flood,   |     |
| FTLN 0438              | Who then, affrighted with their bloody looks,  |     |
| FTLN 0439              | Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds  |     |
| FTLN 0440              | And hid his crisp head in the hollow bank, Blood-stainèd with these valiant combatants.          | 110 |
| FTLN 0441              | _ = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = =  | 110 |
| FTLN 0442              | Never did bare and rotten policy   |     |
| FTLN 0443              | Color her working with such deadly wounds,   |     |
| FTLN 0444              | Nor never could the noble Mortimer   |     |
| FTLN 0445              | Receive so many, and all willingly.  | 115 |
| FTLN 0446              | Then let not him be slandered with revolt.   | 115 |
| TTT 11 0 4 4 5         | KING There does be also him. Domes with any does he lie him.                                     |     |
| FTLN 0447              | Thou dost belie him, Percy; thou dost belie him.   |     |
| FTLN 0448              | He never did encounter with Glendower.   |     |
| FTLN 0449              | I tell thee, he durst as well have met the devil alone   |     |
| FTLN 0450              | As Owen Glendower for an enemy.  | 120 |
| FTLN 0451              | Art thou not ashamed? But, sirrah, henceforth  | 120 |
| FTLN 0452              | Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer.   |     |
| FTLN 0453              | Send me your prisoners with the speediest means,   |     |
| FTLN 0454              | Or you shall hear in such a kind from me   |     |
| FTLN 0455              | As will displease you.—My lord Northumberland,   |     |
| FTLN 0456              | We license your departure with your son.—  | 125 |
| FTLN 0457              | Send us your prisoners, or you will hear of it.  |     |
|                        | King exits \( \text{with Blunt and others.} \)   |     |
|                        |  |     |

|           | HOTSPUR   |      |
|-----------|---|------|
| FTLN 0458 | An if the devil come and roar for them,           |      |
| FTLN 0459 | I will not send them. I will after straight       |      |
| FTLN 0460 | And tell him so, for I will ease my heart,        |      |
| FTLN 0461 | Albeit I make a hazard of my head.                | 130  |
|           | NORTHUMBERLAND                                    |      |
| FTLN 0462 | What, drunk with choler? Stay and pause awhile.   |      |
| FTLN 0463 | Here comes your uncle.                            |      |
|           | Enter Worcester.                                  |      |
| FTLN 0464 | HOTSPUR Speak of Mortimer?                        |      |
| FTLN 0465 | Zounds, I will speak of him, and let my soul      |      |
| FTLN 0466 | Want mercy if I do not join with him.             | 135  |
| FTLN 0467 | Yea, on his part I'll empty all these veins       |      |
| FTLN 0468 | And shed my dear blood drop by drop in the dust,  |      |
| FTLN 0469 | But I will lift the downtrod Mortimer             |      |
| FTLN 0470 | As high in the air as this unthankful king,       |      |
| FTLN 0471 | As this ingrate and cankered Bolingbroke.         | 140  |
|           | NORTHUMBERLAND                                    |      |
| FTLN 0472 | Brother, the King hath made your nephew mad.      |      |
|           | WORCESTER   |      |
| FTLN 0473 | Who struck this heat up after I was gone?         |      |
|           | HOTSPUR   |      |
| FTLN 0474 | He will forsooth have all my prisoners,           |      |
| FTLN 0475 | And when I urged the ransom once again            |      |
| FTLN 0476 | Of my wife's brother, then his cheek looked pale, | 145  |
| FTLN 0477 | And on my face he turned an eye of death,         |      |
| FTLN 0478 | Trembling even at the name of Mortimer.           |      |
|           | WORCESTER   |      |
| FTLN 0479 | I cannot blame him. Was not he proclaimed         |      |
| FTLN 0480 | By Richard, that dead is, the next of blood?      |      |
|           | NORTHUMBERLAND                                    | 1.50 |
| FTLN 0481 | He was; I heard the proclamation.                 | 150  |
| FTLN 0482 | And then it was when the unhappy king—            |      |
| FTLN 0483 | Whose wrongs in us God pardon!—did set forth      |      |
| FTLN 0484 | Upon his Irish expedition;                        |      |

| FTLN 0485 | From whence he, intercepted, did return          |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0486 | To be deposed and shortly murderèd.              | 155 |
|           | WORCESTER  | 100 |
| FTLN 0487 | And for whose death we in the world's wide mouth |     |
| FTLN 0488 | Live scandalized and foully spoken of.           |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0489 | But soft, I pray you. Did King Richard then      |     |
| FTLN 0490 | Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer              |     |
| FTLN 0491 | Heir to the crown?                               | 160 |
| FTLN 0492 | NORTHUMBERLAND He did; myself did hear it.       |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0493 | Nay then, I cannot blame his cousin king         |     |
| FTLN 0494 | That wished him on the barren mountains starve.  |     |
| FTLN 0495 | But shall it be that you that set the crown      |     |
| FTLN 0496 | Upon the head of this forgetful man              | 165 |
| FTLN 0497 | And for his sake wear the detested blot          |     |
| FTLN 0498 | Of murderous subornation—shall it be             |     |
| FTLN 0499 | That you a world of curses undergo,              |     |
| FTLN 0500 | Being the agents or base second means,           |     |
| FTLN 0501 | The cords, the ladder, or the hangman rather?    | 170 |
| FTLN 0502 | O, pardon me that I descend so low               |     |
| FTLN 0503 | To show the line and the predicament             |     |
| FTLN 0504 | Wherein you range under this subtle king.        |     |
| FTLN 0505 | Shall it for shame be spoken in these days,      |     |
| FTLN 0506 | Or fill up chronicles in time to come,           | 175 |
| FTLN 0507 | That men of your nobility and power              |     |
| FTLN 0508 | Did gage them both in an unjust behalf           |     |
| FTLN 0509 | (As both of you, God pardon it, have done)       |     |
| FTLN 0510 | To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,     |     |
| FTLN 0511 | And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke?  | 180 |
| FTLN 0512 | And shall it in more shame be further spoken     |     |
| FTLN 0513 | That you are fooled, discarded, and shook off    |     |
| FTLN 0514 | By him for whom these shames you underwent?      |     |
| FTLN 0515 | No, yet time serves wherein you may redeem       |     |
| FTLN 0516 | Your banished honors and restore yourselves      | 185 |
| FTLN 0517 | Into the good thoughts of the world again,       |     |

| FTLN 0518 | Revenge the jeering and disdained contempt      |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0519 | Of this proud king, who studies day and night   |     |
| FTLN 0520 | To answer all the debt he owes to you           |     |
| FTLN 0521 | Even with the bloody payment of your deaths.    | 190 |
| FTLN 0522 | Therefore I say—                                |     |
| FTLN 0523 | WORCESTER Peace, cousin, say no more.           |     |
| FTLN 0524 | And now I will unclasp a secret book,           |     |
| FTLN 0525 | And to your quick-conceiving discontents        |     |
| FTLN 0526 | I'll read you matter deep and dangerous,        | 195 |
| FTLN 0527 | As full of peril and adventurous spirit         |     |
| FTLN 0528 | As to o'erwalk a current roaring loud           |     |
| FTLN 0529 | On the unsteadfast footing of a spear.          |     |
|           | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 0530 | If he fall in, good night, or sink or swim!     |     |
| FTLN 0531 | Send danger from the east unto the west,        | 200 |
| FTLN 0532 | So honor cross it from the north to south,      |     |
| FTLN 0533 | And let them grapple. O, the blood more stirs   |     |
| FTLN 0534 | To rouse a lion than to start a hare!           |     |
|           | NORTHUMBERLAND, to Worcester                    |     |
| FTLN 0535 | Imagination of some great exploit               |     |
| FTLN 0536 | Drives him beyond the bounds of patience.       | 205 |
|           | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 0537 | By heaven, methinks it were an easy leap        |     |
| FTLN 0538 | To pluck bright honor from the pale-faced moon, |     |
| FTLN 0539 | Or dive into the bottom of the deep,            |     |
| FTLN 0540 | Where fathom line could never touch the ground, |     |
| FTLN 0541 | And pluck up drownèd honor by the locks,        | 210 |
| FTLN 0542 | So he that doth redeem her thence might wear    |     |
| FTLN 0543 | Without corrival all her dignities.             |     |
| FTLN 0544 | But out upon this half-faced fellowship!        |     |
|           | WORCESTER                                       |     |
| FTLN 0545 | He apprehends a world of figures here,          |     |
| FTLN 0546 | But not the form of what he should attend.—     | 215 |
| FTLN 0547 | Good cousin, give me audience for a while.      |     |
|           | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 0548 | I cry you mercy.                                |     |
|           |   |     |

| FTLN 0549 | WORCESTER Those same noble Scots                   |       |
|-----------|--|-------|
| FTLN 0550 | That are your prisoners—                           |       |
| FTLN 0551 | HOTSPUR I'll keep them all.                        | 220   |
| FTLN 0552 | By God, he shall not have a Scot of them.          | 220   |
| FTLN 0553 | No, if a Scot would save his soul, he shall not.   |       |
| FTLN 0554 | I'll keep them, by this hand!                      |       |
| FTLN 0555 | WORCESTER You start away                           |       |
| FTLN 0556 | And lend no ear unto my purposes:                  | 225   |
| FTLN 0557 | Those prisoners you shall keep—                    |       |
| FTLN 0558 | HOTSPUR Nay, I will. That's flat!                  |       |
| FTLN 0559 | He said he would not ransom Mortimer,              |       |
| FTLN 0560 | Forbade my tongue to speak of Mortimer.            |       |
| FTLN 0561 | But I will find him when he lies asleep,           | 230   |
| FTLN 0562 | And in his ear I'll hollo "Mortimer."              |       |
| FTLN 0563 | Nay, I'll have a starling shall be taught to speak |       |
| FTLN 0564 | Nothing but "Mortimer," and give it him            |       |
| FTLN 0565 | To keep his anger still in motion.                 |       |
| FTLN 0566 | WORCESTER Hear you, cousin, a word.                | 235   |
|           | HOTSPUR  |       |
| FTLN 0567 | All studies here I solemnly defy,                  |       |
| FTLN 0568 | Save how to gall and pinch this Bolingbroke.       |       |
| FTLN 0569 | And that same sword-and-buckler Prince of Wales    | 3—    |
| FTLN 0570 | But that I think his father loves him not          |       |
| FTLN 0571 | And would be glad he met with some mischance—      | _ 240 |
| FTLN 0572 | I would have him poisoned with a pot of ale.       |       |
|           | WORCESTER  |       |
| FTLN 0573 | Farewell, kinsman. I'll talk to you                |       |
| FTLN 0574 | When you are better tempered to attend.            |       |
|           | NORTHUMBERLAND, \[ \text{to Hotspur} \]            |       |
| FTLN 0575 | Why, what a wasp-stung and impatient fool          |       |
| FTLN 0576 | Art thou to break into this woman's mood,          | 245   |
| FTLN 0577 | Tying thine ear to no tongue but thine own!        |       |
|           | HOTSPUR  | 1     |
| FTLN 0578 | Why, look you, I am [whipped] and scourged wit     | h     |
| FTLN 0579 | rods,  |       |
| FTLN 0580 | Nettled and stung with pismires, when I hear       |       |

| FTLN 0581              | Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke.             | 250 |
|------------------------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0581              | In Richard's time—what do you call the place?     | 230 |
| FTLN 0582              | A plague upon it! It is in Gloucestershire.       |     |
| FTLN 0584              | 'Twas where the madcap duke his uncle kept,       |     |
| FTLN 0584              | His uncle York, where I first bowed my knee       |     |
| FTLN 0586              | Unto this king of smiles, this Bolingbroke.       | 255 |
| FTLN 0580<br>FTLN 0587 | 'Sblood, when you and he came back from           | 233 |
| FTLN 0588              | Ravenspurgh.                                      |     |
|                        | NORTHUMBERLAND At Berkeley Castle.                |     |
| FTLN 0589<br>FTLN 0590 | HOTSPUR You say true.                             |     |
|                        | Why, what a candy deal of courtesy                | 260 |
| FTLN 0591              | This fawning greyhound then did proffer me:       | 200 |
| FTLN 0592<br>FTLN 0593 | "Look when his infant fortune came to age,"       |     |
| FTLN 0594              | And "gentle Harry Percy," and "kind cousin."      |     |
|                        | O, the devil take such cozeners!—God forgive me!  |     |
| FTLN 0595<br>FTLN 0596 | Good uncle, tell your tale. I have done.          | 265 |
| F1LN 0390              | WORCESTER   | 203 |
| ETI N 0507             | Nay, if you have not, to it again.                |     |
| FTLN 0597<br>FTLN 0598 | We will stay your leisure.                        |     |
| FTLN 0599              | HOTSPUR I have done, i' faith.                    |     |
| I'ILN 0399             | WORCESTER   |     |
| FTLN 0600              | Then once more to your Scottish prisoners:        |     |
| FTLN 0601              | Deliver them up without their ransom straight,    | 270 |
| FTLN 0602              | And make the Douglas' son your only mean          | 270 |
| FTLN 0603              | For powers in Scotland, which, for divers reasons |     |
| FTLN 0604              | Which I shall send you written, be assured        |     |
| FTLN 0605              | Will easily be granted.—You, my lord,             |     |
| FTLN 0606              | Your son in Scotland being thus employed,         | 275 |
| FTLN 0607              | Shall secretly into the bosom creep               | 270 |
| FTLN 0608              | Of that same noble prelate well beloved,          |     |
| FTLN 0609              | The Archbishop.                                   |     |
| FTLN 0610              | HOTSPUR Of York, is it not?                       |     |
| FTLN 0611              | WORCESTER True, who bears hard                    | 280 |
| FTLN 0612              | His brother's death at Bristol, the Lord Scroop.  | 200 |
| FTLN 0613              | I speak not this in estimation,                   |     |
|                        | 1   |     |

| FTLN 0614 | As what I think might be, but what I know        |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0615 | Is ruminated, plotted, and set down,             |     |
| FTLN 0616 | And only stays but to behold the face            | 285 |
| FTLN 0617 | Of that occasion that shall bring it on.         |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0618 | I smell it. Upon my life it will do well.        |     |
|           | NORTHUMBERLAND                                   |     |
| FTLN 0619 | Before the game is afoot thou still let'st slip. |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0620 | Why, it cannot choose but be a noble plot.       |     |
| FTLN 0621 | And then the power of Scotland and of York       | 290 |
| FTLN 0622 | To join with Mortimer, ha?                       |     |
| FTLN 0623 | WORCESTER And so they shall.                     |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0624 | In faith, it is exceedingly well aimed.          |     |
|           | WORCESTER  |     |
| FTLN 0625 | And 'tis no little reason bids us speed          |     |
| FTLN 0626 | To save our heads by raising of a head,          | 295 |
| FTLN 0627 | For bear ourselves as even as we can,            |     |
| FTLN 0628 | The King will always think him in our debt,      |     |
| FTLN 0629 | And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,        |     |
| FTLN 0630 | Till he hath found a time to pay us home.        |     |
| FTLN 0631 | And see already how he doth begin                | 300 |
| FTLN 0632 | To make us strangers to his looks of love.       |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0633 | He does, he does. We'll be revenged on him.      |     |
|           | WORCESTER  |     |
| FTLN 0634 | Cousin, farewell. No further go in this          |     |
| FTLN 0635 | Than I by letters shall direct your course.      |     |
| FTLN 0636 | When time is ripe, which will be suddenly,       | 305 |
| FTLN 0637 | I'll steal to Glendower and Lord Mortimer,       |     |
| FTLN 0638 | Where you and Douglas and our powers at once,    |     |
| FTLN 0639 | As I will fashion it, shall happily meet         |     |
| FTLN 0640 | To bear [our] fortunes in our own strong arms,   |     |
| FTLN 0641 | Which now we hold at much uncertainty.           | 310 |
|           |  |     |

NORTHUMBERLAND

FTLN 0642 Farewell, good brother. We shall thrive, I trust.

**HOTSPUR** 

Uncle, adieu. O, let the hours be short

Till fields and blows and groans applaud our sport.

They exit.

### 「Scene 17 Enter a Carrier with a lantern in his hand.

| FTLN 0645 | FIRST CARRIER Heigh-ho! An it be not four by the day,  |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 0646 | I'll be hanged. Charles's Wain is over the new         |    |
| FTLN 0647 | chimney, and yet our horse not packed.—What,           |    |
| FTLN 0648 | ostler!  |    |
| FTLN 0649 | OSTLER, [within] Anon, anon.                           | 5  |
| FTLN 0650 | FIRST CARRIER I prithee, Tom, beat Cut's saddle. Put a |    |
| FTLN 0651 | few flocks in the point. Poor jade is wrung in the     |    |
| FTLN 0652 | withers out of all cess.                               |    |
|           | Enter another Carrier, \( \square\) with a lantern.    |    |
| FTLN 0653 | SECOND CARRIER Peas and beans are as dank here as a    |    |
| FTLN 0654 | dog, and that is the next way to give poor jades the   | 10 |
| FTLN 0655 | bots. This house is turned upside down since Robin     |    |
| FTLN 0656 | ostler died.   |    |
| FTLN 0657 | FIRST CARRIER Poor fellow never joyed since the price  |    |
| FTLN 0658 | of oats rose. It was the death of him.                 |    |
| FTLN 0659 | SECOND CARRIER I think this be the most villainous     | 15 |
| FTLN 0660 | house in all London road for fleas. I am stung like a  |    |
| FTLN 0661 | tench.   |    |
| FTLN 0662 | FIRST CARRIER Like a tench? By the Mass, there is      |    |
| FTLN 0663 | ne'er a king christen could be better bit than I have  |    |
| FTLN 0664 | been since the first cock.                             | 20 |
| FTLN 0665 | SECOND CARRIER Why, they will allow us ne'er a jordan, |    |
|           | 51   |    |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 0666 | and then we leak in your chimney, and your              |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 0667 | chamber-lye breeds fleas like a loach.                  |    |
| FTLN 0668 | FIRST CARRIER What, ostler, come away and be            |    |
| FTLN 0669 | hanged. Come away.                                      | 25 |
| FTLN 0670 | SECOND CARRIER I have a gammon of bacon and two         |    |
| FTLN 0671 | races of ginger to be delivered as far as Charing       |    |
| FTLN 0672 | Cross.  |    |
| FTLN 0673 | FIRST CARRIER God's body, the turkeys in my pannier     |    |
| FTLN 0674 | are quite starved.—What, ostler! A plague on thee!      | 30 |
| FTLN 0675 | Hast thou never an eye in thy head? Canst not hear?     |    |
| FTLN 0676 | An 'twere not as good deed as drink to break the        |    |
| FTLN 0677 | pate on thee, I am a very villain. Come, and be         |    |
| FTLN 0678 | hanged. Hast no faith in thee?                          |    |
|           |   |    |
|           | Enter Gadshill.   |    |
|           |   |    |
| FTLN 0679 | GADSHILL Good morrow, carriers. What's o'clock?         | 35 |
| FTLN 0680 | FIRST CARRIER I think it be two o'clock.                |    |
| FTLN 0681 | GADSHILL I prithee, lend me thy lantern to see my       |    |
| FTLN 0682 | gelding in the stable.                                  |    |
| FTLN 0683 | FIRST CARRIER Nay, by God, soft. I know a trick worth   |    |
| FTLN 0684 | two of that, i' faith.                                  | 40 |
| FTLN 0685 | GADSHILL, <i>to Second Carrier</i> I pray thee, lend me |    |
| FTLN 0686 | thine.  |    |
| FTLN 0687 | SECOND CARRIER Ay, when, canst tell? "Lend me thy       |    |
| FTLN 0688 | lantern," quoth he. Marry, I'll see thee hanged         |    |
| FTLN 0689 | first.  | 45 |
| FTLN 0690 | GADSHILL Sirrah carrier, what time do you mean to       |    |
| FTLN 0691 | come to London?   |    |
| FTLN 0692 | SECOND CARRIER Time enough to go to bed with a          |    |
| FTLN 0693 | candle, I warrant thee. Come, neighbor Mugs,            |    |
| FTLN 0694 | we'll call up the gentlemen. They will along with       | 50 |
| FTLN 0695 | company, for they have great charge.                    |    |
|           | [Carriers] exit.  |    |
| FTLN 0696 | GADSHILL What ho, chamberlain!                          |    |

Enter Chamberlain.

| FTLN 0697 | CHAMBERLAIN At hand, quoth pickpurse.                   |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 0698 | GADSHILL That's even as fair as "at hand, quoth the     |    |
| FTLN 0699 | Chamberlain," for thou variest no more from             | 55 |
| FTLN 0700 | picking of purses than giving direction doth from       | 33 |
| FTLN 0701 | laboring: thou layest the plot how.                     |    |
| FTLN 0702 | CHAMBERLAIN Good morrow, Master Gadshill. It holds      |    |
| FTLN 0703 | current that I told you yesternight: there's a franklin |    |
| FTLN 0704 | in the Wild of Kent hath brought three hundred          | 60 |
| FTLN 0705 | marks with him in gold. I heard him tell it to one of   |    |
| FTLN 0706 | his company last night at supper—a kind of auditor,     |    |
| FTLN 0707 | one that hath abundance of charge too, God knows        |    |
| FTLN 0708 | what. They are up already and call for eggs and         |    |
| FTLN 0709 | butter. They will away presently.                       | 65 |
| FTLN 0710 | GADSHILL Sirrah, if they meet not with Saint Nicholas'  |    |
| FTLN 0711 | clerks, I'll give thee this neck.                       |    |
| FTLN 0712 | CHAMBERLAIN No, I'll none of it. I pray thee, keep that |    |
| FTLN 0713 | for the hangman, for I know thou worshipest Saint       |    |
| FTLN 0714 | Nicholas as truly as a man of falsehood may.            | 70 |
| FTLN 0715 | GADSHILL What talkest thou to me of the hangman? If     |    |
| FTLN 0716 | I hang, I'll make a fat pair of gallows, for if I hang, |    |
| FTLN 0717 | old Sir John hangs with me, and thou knowest he is      |    |
| FTLN 0718 | no starveling. Tut, there are other Troyans that        |    |
| FTLN 0719 | thou dream'st not of, the which for sport sake are      | 75 |
| FTLN 0720 | content to do the profession some grace, that           |    |
| FTLN 0721 | would, if matters should be looked into, for their      |    |
| FTLN 0722 | own credit sake make all whole. I am joined with no     |    |
| FTLN 0723 | foot-land-rakers, no long-staff sixpenny strikers,      |    |
| FTLN 0724 | none of these mad mustachio purple-hued malt-worms,     | 80 |
| FTLN 0725 | but with nobility and tranquillity, burgomasters        |    |
| FTLN 0726 | and great oneyers, such as can hold in, such            |    |
| FTLN 0727 | as will strike sooner than speak, and speak sooner      |    |
| FTLN 0728 | than drink, and drink sooner than pray, and yet,        |    |
| FTLN 0729 | zounds, I lie, for they pray continually to their saint | 85 |
| FTLN 0730 | the commonwealth, or rather not pray to her but         |    |
| FTLN 0731 | prey on her, for they ride up and down on her and       |    |
| FTLN 0732 | make her their boots.                                   |    |

| CHAMBERLAIN What, the commonwealth their boots?   |  |
|---|--|
| Will she hold out water in foul way?  | 90   |
| GADSHILL She will, she will. Justice hath liquored her.   |  |
| We steal as in a castle, cocksure. We have the  |  |
| receipt of fern seed; we walk invisible.  |  |
| CHAMBERLAIN Nay, by my faith, I think you are more  |  |
| beholding to the night than to fern seed for your   | 95   |
| walking invisible.  |  |
| GADSHILL Give me thy hand. Thou shalt have a share in   |  |
| our purchase, as I am a true man.   |  |
| CHAMBERLAIN Nay, rather let me have it as you are a   |  |
| false thief.  | 100  |
| GADSHILL Go to. <i>Homo</i> is a common name to all men.  |  |
| Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable.  |  |
| Farewell, you muddy knave.  |  |
| <sup>r</sup> They exit. <sup>7</sup>  |  |
|   |  |
|   |  |
| C   |  |
| Scene 2   |  |
| Scene 2 Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph,」 and Peto.  |  |
|   |  |
|   |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.   |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's  |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit."   |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit."   |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph,」 and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit.」  Enter Falstaff.   | 5  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit. The Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  | 5  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph,」 and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit.」  Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  PRINCE Peace, you fat-kidneyed rascal. What a brawling dost thou keep!  FALSTAFF Where's Poins, Hal?   | 5  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit. The Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  PRINCE Peace, you fat-kidneyed rascal. What a brawling dost thou keep!  | 5  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph,」 and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit.」  Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  PRINCE Peace, you fat-kidneyed rascal. What a brawling dost thou keep!  FALSTAFF Where's Poins, Hal?   | 5  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit.  Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  PRINCE Peace, you fat-kidneyed rascal. What a brawling dost thou keep!  FALSTAFF Where's Poins, Hal?  PRINCE He is walked up to the top of the hill. I'll go   | 5  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, 「Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. 「Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit. 」  Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  PRINCE Peace, you fat-kidneyed rascal. What a brawling dost thou keep!  FALSTAFF Where's Poins, Hal?  PRINCE He is walked up to the top of the hill. I'll go seek him. 「Prince exits. 」  |  |
| Enter Prince, Poins, Bardolph, and Peto.  POINS Come, shelter, shelter! I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.  PRINCE Stand close. Poins, Bardolph, and Peto exit.  Enter Falstaff.  FALSTAFF Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  PRINCE Peace, you fat-kidneyed rascal. What a brawling dost thou keep!  FALSTAFF Where's Poins, Hal?  PRINCE He is walked up to the top of the hill. I'll go seek him. Prince exits.  FALSTAFF I am accursed to rob in that thief's company. |  |
|   | Will she hold out water in foul way?  GADSHILL She will, she will. Justice hath liquored her.  We steal as in a castle, cocksure. We have the receipt of fern seed; we walk invisible.  CHAMBERLAIN Nay, by my faith, I think you are more beholding to the night than to fern seed for your walking invisible.  GADSHILL Give me thy hand. Thou shalt have a share in our purchase, as I am a true man.  CHAMBERLAIN Nay, rather let me have it as you are a false thief.  GADSHILL Go to. <i>Homo</i> is a common name to all men.  Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable.  Farewell, you muddy knave. |

| FTLN 0761<br>FTLN 0762<br>FTLN 0763<br>FTLN 0764 | doubt not but to die a fair death for all this, if I 'scape hanging for killing that rogue. I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two-and-twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the | 15 |
|--|--|----|
| FTLN 0765  | rogue's company. If the rascal have not given me   |    |
| FTLN 0766  | medicines to make me love him, I'll be hanged. It  |    |
| FTLN 0767  | could not be else: I have drunk medicines.—Poins!  | 20 |
| FTLN 0768  | Hal! A plague upon you both.—Bardolph! Peto!—  |    |
| FTLN 0769  | I'll starve ere I'll rob a foot further. An 'twere not as  |    |
| FTLN 0770  | good a deed as drink to turn true man and to leave   |    |
| FTLN 0771  | these rogues, I am the veriest varlet that ever  |    |
| FTLN 0772  | chewed with a tooth. Eight yards of uneven ground  | 25 |
| FTLN 0773  | is threescore and ten miles afoot with me, and the   |    |
| FTLN 0774  | stony-hearted villains know it well enough. A plague   |    |
| FTLN 0775  | upon it when thieves cannot be true one to another!  |    |
| FTLN 0776  | (They whistle, \( \text{within.} \) Whew! A plague upon you  |    |
| FTLN 0777  | all!   | 30 |
|  | Enter the Prince, Poins, Peto, and Bardolph.   |    |
| FTLN 0778  | Give me my horse, you rogues. Give me my horse   |    |
| FTLN 0779  | and be hanged!   |    |
| FTLN 0780  | PRINCE Peace, you fat guts! Lie down, lay thine ear  |    |
| FTLN 0781  | close to the ground, and list if thou canst hear the   |    |
| FTLN 0782  | tread of travelers.  | 35 |
| FTLN 0783  | FALSTAFF Have you any levers to lift me up again being   |    |
| FTLN 0784  | down? 'Sblood, I'll not bear my own flesh so   |    |
| FTLN 0785  | far afoot again for all the coin in thy father's Exchequer.  |    |
| FTLN 0786  | What a plague mean you to colt me  |    |
| FTLN 0787  | thus?  | 40 |
| FTLN 0788  | PRINCE Thou liest. Thou art not colted; thou art   |    |
| FTLN 0789  | uncolted.  |    |
| FTLN 0790  | FALSTAFF I prithee, good Prince Hal, help me to my   |    |
| FTLN 0791  | horse, good king's son.  |    |
| FTLN 0792  | PRINCE Out, you rogue! Shall I be your ostler?   | 45 |
| FTLN 0793  | FALSTAFF Hang thyself in thine own heir-apparent   |    |
| FTLN 0794  | garters! If I be ta'en, I'll peach for this. An I have   |    |
|  |  |    |

| FTLN 0795<br>FTLN 0796<br>FTLN 0797 | not ballads made on you all and sung to filthy tunes, let a cup of sack be my poison—when a jest is so forward, and afoot too! I hate it. | 50 |
|-------------------------------------|---|----|
|                                     | Enter Gadshill.   |    |
| FTLN 0798                           | GADSHILL Stand.   |    |
| FTLN 0799                           | FALSTAFF So I do, against my will.  |    |
| FTLN 0800                           | POINS O, 'tis our setter. I know his voice.   |    |
| FTLN 0801                           | BARDOLPH What news?   |    |
| FTLN 0802                           | GADSHILL Case you, case you. On with your vizards.  | 55 |
| FTLN 0803                           | There's money of the King's coming down the hill.   |    |
| FTLN 0804                           | 'Tis going to the King's Exchequer.   |    |
| FTLN 0805                           | FALSTAFF You lie, you rogue. 'Tis going to the King's   |    |
| FTLN 0806                           | Tavern.   |    |
| FTLN 0807                           | GADSHILL There's enough to make us all.   | 60 |
| FTLN 0808                           | FALSTAFF To be hanged.  |    |
| FTLN 0809                           | PRINCE Sirs, you four shall front them in the narrow  |    |
| FTLN 0810                           | lane. Ned Poins and I will walk lower. If they 'scape   |    |
| FTLN 0811                           | from your encounter, then they light on us.   |    |
| FTLN 0812                           | PETO How many be there of them?   | 65 |
| FTLN 0813                           | GADSHILL Some eight or ten.   |    |
| FTLN 0814                           | FALSTAFF Zounds, will they not rob us?  |    |
| FTLN 0815                           | PRINCE What, a coward, Sir John Paunch?   |    |
| FTLN 0816                           | FALSTAFF Indeed, I am not John of Gaunt, your grandfather,  |    |
| FTLN 0817                           | but yet no coward, Hal.   | 70 |
| FTLN 0818                           | PRINCE Well, we leave that to the proof.  |    |
| FTLN 0819                           | POINS Sirrah Jack, thy horse stands behind the hedge.   |    |
| FTLN 0820                           | When thou need'st him, there thou shalt find him.   |    |
| FTLN 0821                           | Farewell and stand fast.  |    |
| FTLN 0822                           | FALSTAFF Now cannot I strike him, if I should be  | 75 |
| FTLN 0823                           | hanged.   |    |
| FTLN 0824                           | PRINCE, <i>aside to Poins</i> Ned, where are our disguises?   |    |
| FTLN 0825                           | POINS, <i>aside to Prince</i> Here, hard by. Stand close. <i>The Prince and Poins exit.</i>   |    |
| FTLN 0826                           | FALSTAFF Now, my masters, happy man be his dole,  |    |
| FTLN 0827                           | say I. Every man to his business.   | 80 |
|                                     | They step aside.  |    |

### Enter the Travelers.

| FTLN 0828 | FIRST TRAVELER Come, neighbor, the boy shall lead     |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0829 | our horses down the hill. We'll walk afoot awhile     |     |
| FTLN 0830 | and ease our legs.                                    |     |
| FTLN 0831 | THIEVES, [advancing] Stand!                           |     |
| FTLN 0832 | TRAVELERS Jesus bless us!                             | 85  |
| FTLN 0833 | FALSTAFF Strike! Down with them! Cut the villains'    |     |
| FTLN 0834 | throats! Ah, whoreson caterpillars, bacon-fed         |     |
| FTLN 0835 | knaves, they hate us youth. Down with them!           |     |
| FTLN 0836 | Fleece them!  |     |
| FTLN 0837 | TRAVELERS O, we are undone, both we and ours          | 90  |
| FTLN 0838 | forever!  |     |
| FTLN 0839 | FALSTAFF Hang, you gorbellied knaves! Are you undone? |     |
| FTLN 0840 | No, you fat chuffs. I would your store were           |     |
| FTLN 0841 | here. On, bacons, on! What, you knaves, young men     |     |
| FTLN 0842 | must live. You are grandjurors, are you? We'll jure   | 95  |
| FTLN 0843 | you, faith.   |     |
|           | Here they rob them and bind them. They [all] exit.    |     |
|           |   |     |
|           | Enter the Prince and Poins, disguised.                |     |
| FTLN 0844 | PRINCE The thieves have bound the true men. Now       |     |
| FTLN 0845 | could thou and I rob the thieves and go merrily to    |     |
| FTLN 0846 | London, it would be argument for a week, laughter     |     |
| FTLN 0847 | for a month, and a good jest forever.                 | 100 |
| FTLN 0848 | POINS Stand close, I hear them coming.                |     |
|           | They step aside.                                      |     |
|           |   |     |
|           | Enter the Thieves again.                              |     |
| FTLN 0849 | FALSTAFF Come, my masters, let us share, and then to  |     |
| FTLN 0850 | horse before day. An the Prince and Poins be not      |     |
| FTLN 0851 | two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring.       |     |
| FTLN 0852 | There's no more valor in that Poins than in a wild    | 105 |
| FTLN 0853 | duck.   | 100 |
|           | As they are sharing, the Prince                       |     |
|           | and Poins set upon them.                              |     |
|           |   |     |

| FTLN 0854 | PRINCE Your money!                                    |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 0855 | POINS Villains!                                       |     |
|           | They all run away, and Falstaff, after a blow or two, |     |
|           | runs away too, leaving the booty behind them.         |     |
|           | PRINCE  |     |
| FTLN 0856 | Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse.             |     |
| FTLN 0857 | The thieves are all scattered, and possessed with     | 110 |
| FTLN 0858 | fear  |     |
| FTLN 0859 | So strongly that they dare not meet each other.       |     |
| FTLN 0860 | Each takes his fellow for an officer.                 |     |
| FTLN 0861 | Away, good Ned. Falstaff sweats to death,             |     |
| FTLN 0862 | And lards the lean earth as he walks along.           | 115 |
| FTLN 0863 | Were 't not for laughing, I should pity him.          |     |
| FTLN 0864 | POINS How the fat rogue roared!                       |     |
|           | They exit.  |     |
|           |   |     |

Scene 37 *Enter Hotspur alone, reading a letter.* 

| FTLN 0865 | HOTSPUR But, for mine own part, my lord, I could be   |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 0866 | well contented to be there, in respect of the love I  |    |
| FTLN 0867 | bear your house. He could be contented; why is he     |    |
| FTLN 0868 | not, then? In respect of the love he bears our        |    |
| FTLN 0869 | house—he shows in this he loves his own barn          | 5  |
| FTLN 0870 | better than he loves our house. Let me see some       |    |
| FTLN 0871 | more. The purpose you undertake is dangerous.         |    |
| FTLN 0872 | Why, that's certain. 'Tis dangerous to take a cold,   |    |
| FTLN 0873 | to sleep, to drink; but I tell you, my Lord Fool, out |    |
| FTLN 0874 | of this nettle, danger, we pluck this flower, safety. | 10 |
| FTLN 0875 | The purpose you undertake is dangerous, the friends   |    |
| FTLN 0876 | you have named uncertain, the time itself unsorted,   |    |
| FTLN 0877 | and your whole plot too light for the counterpoise    |    |
| FTLN 0878 | of so great an opposition. Say you so, say you so?    |    |
| FTLN 0879 | I say unto you again, you are a shallow, cowardly     | 15 |
| FTLN 0880 | hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this! By      |    |

| FTLN 0881<br>FTLN 0882<br>FTLN 0883 | the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid, our friends true and constant—a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation; an excellent |    |
|-------------------------------------|--|----|
| FTLN 0884                           | plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited  | 20 |
| FTLN 0885                           | rogue is this! Why, my Lord of York commends   |    |
| FTLN 0886                           | the plot and the general course of the action.   |    |
| FTLN 0887                           | Zounds, an I were now by this rascal, I could brain  |    |
| FTLN 0888                           | him with his lady's fan. Is there not my father, my  |    |
| FTLN 0889                           | uncle, and myself, Lord Edmund Mortimer, my  | 25 |
| FTLN 0890                           | Lord of York, and Owen Glendower? Is there not   |    |
| FTLN 0891                           | besides the Douglas? Have I not all their letters to   |    |
| FTLN 0892                           | meet me in arms by the ninth of the next month,  |    |
| FTLN 0893                           | and are they not some of them set forward already?   |    |
| FTLN 0894                           | What a pagan rascal is this—an infidel! Ha, you  | 30 |
| FTLN 0895                           | shall see now, in very sincerity of fear and cold  |    |
| FTLN 0896                           | heart, will he to the King and lay open all our  |    |
| FTLN 0897                           | proceedings. O, I could divide myself and go to  |    |
| FTLN 0898                           | buffets for moving such a dish of skim milk with so  |    |
| FTLN 0899                           | honorable an action! Hang him, let him tell the  | 35 |
| FTLN 0900                           | King. We are prepared. I will set forward tonight.   |    |
|                                     | Enter his Lady.  |    |
| FTLN 0901                           | How now, Kate? I must leave you within these two   |    |
| FTLN 0902                           | hours.   |    |
|                                     | LADY PERCY   |    |
| FTLN 0903                           | O my good lord, why are you thus alone?  |    |
| FTLN 0904                           | For what offense have I this fortnight been  | 40 |
| FTLN 0905                           | A banished woman from my Harry's bed?  |    |
| FTLN 0906                           | Tell me, sweet lord, what is 't that takes from thee   |    |
| FTLN 0907                           | Thy stomach, pleasure, and thy golden sleep?   |    |
| FTLN 0908                           | Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth   |    |
| FTLN 0909                           | And start so often when thou sit'st alone?   | 45 |
| FTLN 0910                           | Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks   |    |
| FTLN 0911                           | And given my treasures and my rights of thee   |    |
| FTLN 0912                           | To thick-eyed musing and curst melancholy?   |    |
| FTLN 0913                           | In thy faint slumbers I by thee have watched,  |    |

| FTLN 0914 | And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars,          | 50 |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 0915 | Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed,       |    |
| FTLN 0916 | Cry "Courage! To the field!" And thou hast talked  |    |
| FTLN 0917 | Of sallies and retires, of trenches, tents,        |    |
| FTLN 0918 | Of palisadoes, frontiers, parapets,                |    |
| FTLN 0919 | Of basilisks, of cannon, culverin,                 | 55 |
| FTLN 0920 | Of prisoners' ransom, and of soldiers slain,       |    |
| FTLN 0921 | And all the currents of a heady fight.             |    |
| FTLN 0922 | Thy spirit within thee hath been so at war,        |    |
| FTLN 0923 | And thus hath so bestirred thee in thy sleep,      |    |
| FTLN 0924 | That beads of sweat have stood upon thy brow       | 60 |
| FTLN 0925 | Like bubbles in a late-disturbèd stream,           |    |
| FTLN 0926 | And in thy face strange motions have appeared,     |    |
| FTLN 0927 | Such as we see when men restrain their breath      |    |
| FTLN 0928 | On some great sudden hest. O, what portents are    |    |
| FTLN 0929 | these?   | 65 |
| FTLN 0930 | Some heavy business hath my lord in hand,          |    |
| FTLN 0931 | And I must know it, else he loves me not.          |    |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 0932 | What, ho!  |    |
|           |  |    |
|           | 「Enter a Servant.                                  |    |
|           |  |    |
| FTLN 0933 | Is Gilliams with the packet gone?                  |    |
| FTLN 0934 | SERVANT He is, my lord, an hour ago.               | 70 |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 0935 | Hath Butler brought those horses from the sheriff? |    |
|           | SERVANT  |    |
| FTLN 0936 | One horse, my lord, he brought even now.           |    |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 0937 | What horse? A roan, a crop-ear, is it not?         |    |
|           | SERVANT  |    |
| FTLN 0938 | It is, my lord.                                    |    |
| FTLN 0939 | HOTSPUR That roan shall be my throne.              | 75 |
| FTLN 0940 | Well, I will back him straight. O, Esperance!      |    |
| FTLN 0941 | Bid Butler lead him forth into the park.           |    |
|           | Servant exits.                                     |    |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 0942 | LADY PERCY But hear you, my lord.              |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0943 | HOTSPUR What say'st thou, my lady?             |     |
| FTLN 0944 | LADY PERCY What is it carries you away?        | 80  |
| FTLN 0945 | HOTSPUR Why, my horse, my love, my horse.      |     |
| FTLN 0946 | LADY PERCY Out, you mad-headed ape!            |     |
| FTLN 0947 | A weasel hath not such a deal of spleen        |     |
| FTLN 0948 | As you are tossed with. In faith,              |     |
| FTLN 0949 | I'll know your business, Harry, that I will.   | 85  |
| FTLN 0950 | I fear my brother Mortimer doth stir           |     |
| FTLN 0951 | About his title, and hath sent for you         |     |
| FTLN 0952 | To line his enterprise; but if you go—         |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 0953 | So far afoot, I shall be weary, love.          |     |
|           | LADY PERCY                                     |     |
| FTLN 0954 | Come, come, you paraquito, answer me           | 90  |
| FTLN 0955 | Directly unto this question that I ask.        |     |
| FTLN 0956 | In faith, I'll break thy little finger, Harry, |     |
| FTLN 0957 | An if thou wilt not tell me all things true.   |     |
| FTLN 0958 | HOTSPUR Away!                                  |     |
| FTLN 0959 | Away, you trifler. Love, I love thee not.      | 95  |
| FTLN 0960 | I care not for thee, Kate. This is no world    |     |
| FTLN 0961 | To play with mammets and to tilt with lips.    |     |
| FTLN 0962 | We must have bloody noses and cracked crowns,  |     |
| FTLN 0963 | And pass them current too.—Gods me, my horse!— |     |
| FTLN 0964 | What say'st thou, Kate? What wouldst thou have | 100 |
| FTLN 0965 | with me?                                       |     |
|           | LADY PERCY                                     |     |
| FTLN 0966 | Do you not love me? Do you not indeed?         |     |
| FTLN 0967 | Well, do not then, for since you love me not,  |     |
| FTLN 0968 | I will not love myself. Do you not love me?    |     |
| FTLN 0969 | Nay, tell me if you speak in jest or no.       | 105 |
| FTLN 0970 | HOTSPUR Come, wilt thou see me ride?           |     |
| FTLN 0971 | And when I am a-horseback I will swear         |     |
| FTLN 0972 | I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate,    |     |
| FTLN 0973 | I must not have you henceforth question me     |     |
| FTLN 0974 | Whither I go, nor reason whereabout.           | 110 |
|           |  |     |

| FTLN 0975 | Whither I must, I must; and to conclude      |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 0976 | This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate.  |     |
| FTLN 0977 | I know you wise, but yet no farther wise     |     |
| FTLN 0978 | Than Harry Percy's wife; constant you are,   |     |
| FTLN 0979 | But yet a woman; and for secrecy             | 115 |
| FTLN 0980 | No lady closer, for I well believe           |     |
| FTLN 0981 | Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know, |     |
| FTLN 0982 | And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate.   |     |
| FTLN 0983 | LADY PERCY How? So far?                      |     |
|           | HOTSPUR                                      |     |
| FTLN 0984 | Not an inch further. But hark you, Kate,     | 120 |
| FTLN 0985 | Whither I go, thither shall you go too.      |     |
| FTLN 0986 | Today will I set forth, tomorrow you.        |     |
| FTLN 0987 | Will this content you, Kate?                 |     |
| FTLN 0988 | LADY PERCY It must, of force.                |     |
|           | They exit.                                   |     |

## Scene 4 Enter Prince and Poins.

| FTLN 0989 | PRINCE Ned, prithee, come out of that fat room and    |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 0990 | lend me thy hand to laugh a little.                   |    |
| FTLN 0991 | POINS Where hast been, Hal?                           |    |
| FTLN 0992 | PRINCE With three or four loggerheads amongst three   |    |
| FTLN 0993 | or fourscore hogsheads. I have sounded the very       | 5  |
| FTLN 0994 | bass string of humility. Sirrah, I am sworn brother   |    |
| FTLN 0995 | to a leash of drawers, and can call them all by their |    |
| FTLN 0996 | Christian names, as Tom, Dick, and Francis. They      |    |
| FTLN 0997 | take it already upon their salvation that though I be |    |
| FTLN 0998 | but Prince of Wales, yet I am the king of courtesy,   | 10 |
| FTLN 0999 | and tell me flatly I am no proud jack, like Falstaff, |    |
| FTLN 1000 | but a Corinthian, a lad of mettle, a good boy—by      |    |
| FTLN 1001 | the Lord, so they call me—and when I am king of       |    |
| FTLN 1002 | England, I shall command all the good lads in         |    |
| FTLN 1003 | Eastcheap. They call drinking deep "dyeing scarlet,"  | 15 |

| FTLN 1004 | and when you breathe in your watering, they            |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 1005 | cry "Hem!" and bid you "Play it off!" To conclude, I   |    |
| FTLN 1006 | am so good a proficient in one quarter of an hour      |    |
| FTLN 1007 | that I can drink with any tinker in his own language   |    |
| FTLN 1008 | during my life. I tell thee, Ned, thou hast lost much  | 20 |
| FTLN 1009 | honor that thou wert not with me in this action; but,  |    |
| FTLN 1010 | sweet Ned—to sweeten which name of Ned, I give         |    |
| FTLN 1011 | thee this pennyworth of sugar, clapped even now        |    |
| FTLN 1012 | into my hand by an underskinker, one that never        |    |
| FTLN 1013 | spake other English in his life than "Eight shillings  | 25 |
| FTLN 1014 | and sixpence," and "You are welcome," with this        |    |
| FTLN 1015 | shrill addition, "Anon, anon, sir.—Score a pint of     |    |
| FTLN 1016 | bastard in the Half-moon," or so. But, Ned, to         |    |
| FTLN 1017 | drive away the time till Falstaff come, I prithee, do  |    |
| FTLN 1018 | thou stand in some by-room while I question my         | 30 |
| FTLN 1019 | puny drawer to what end he gave me the sugar, and      |    |
| FTLN 1020 | do thou never leave calling "Francis," that his tale   |    |
| FTLN 1021 | to me may be nothing but "Anon." Step aside, and       |    |
| FTLN 1022 | I'll show thee a precedent. Poins exits.               |    |
| FTLN 1023 | POINS, within Francis!                                 | 35 |
| FTLN 1024 | PRINCE Thou art perfect.                               |    |
| FTLN 1025 | POINS, within Francis!                                 |    |
|           | Enter [Francis, the] Drawer.                           |    |
| FTLN 1026 | FRANCIS Anon, anon, sir.—Look down into the Pomgarnet, |    |
| FTLN 1027 | Ralph.   |    |
| FTLN 1028 | PRINCE Come hither, Francis.                           | 40 |
| FTLN 1029 | FRANCIS My lord?                                       |    |
| FTLN 1030 | PRINCE How long hast thou to serve, Francis?           |    |
| FTLN 1031 | FRANCIS Forsooth, five years, and as much as to—       |    |
| FTLN 1032 | POINS, within Francis!                                 |    |
| FTLN 1033 | FRANCIS Anon, anon, sir.                               | 45 |
| FTLN 1034 | PRINCE Five year! By 'r Lady, a long lease for the     |    |
| FTLN 1035 | clinking of pewter! But, Francis, darest thou be       |    |
| FTLN 1036 | so valiant as to play the coward with thy indenture,   |    |
| FTLN 1037 | and show it a fair pair of heels, and run              |    |
| FTLN 1038 | from it?   | 50 |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 1039 | FRANCIS O Lord, sir, I'll be sworn upon all the books               |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 1040 | in England, I could find in my heart—                               |    |
| FTLN 1041 | POINS, within Francis!  |    |
| FTLN 1042 | FRANCIS Anon, sir.  |    |
| FTLN 1043 | PRINCE How old art thou, Francis?                                   | 55 |
| FTLN 1044 | FRANCIS Let me see. About Michaelmas next, I shall                  |    |
| FTLN 1045 | be—   |    |
| FTLN 1046 | POINS, within Francis!  |    |
| FTLN 1047 | FRANCIS Anon, sir.—Pray, stay a little, my lord.                    |    |
| FTLN 1048 | PRINCE Nay, but hark you, Francis, for the sugar thou               | 60 |
| FTLN 1049 | gavest me—'twas a pennyworth, was 't not?                           |    |
| FTLN 1050 | FRANCIS O Lord, I would it had been two!                            |    |
| FTLN 1051 | PRINCE I will give thee for it a thousand pound. Ask                |    |
| FTLN 1052 | me when thou wilt, and thou shalt have it.                          |    |
| FTLN 1053 | POINS, within Francis!  | 65 |
| FTLN 1054 | FRANCIS Anon, anon.   |    |
| FTLN 1055 | PRINCE Anon, Francis? No, Francis. But tomorrow,                    |    |
| FTLN 1056 | Francis; or, Francis, o' Thursday; or indeed, Francis,              |    |
| FTLN 1057 | when thou wilt. But, Francis—                                       |    |
| FTLN 1058 | FRANCIS My lord?  | 70 |
| FTLN 1059 | PRINCE Wilt thou rob this leathern-jerkin, crystal-button,          |    |
| FTLN 1060 | not-pated, agate-ring, puke-stocking, caddis-garter,                |    |
| FTLN 1061 | smooth-tongue, Spanish-pouch—                                       |    |
| FTLN 1062 | FRANCIS O Lord, sir, who do you mean?                               |    |
| FTLN 1063 | PRINCE Why then, your brown bastard is your only                    | 75 |
| FTLN 1064 | drink, for look you, Francis, your white canvas                     |    |
| FTLN 1065 | doublet will sully. In Barbary, sir, it cannot come to              |    |
| FTLN 1066 | so much.  |    |
| FTLN 1067 | FRANCIS What, sir?  |    |
| FTLN 1068 | POINS, [within] Francis!  | 80 |
| FTLN 1069 | PRINCE Away, you rogue! Dost thou not hear them                     |    |
| FTLN 1070 | call?   |    |
|           | 11 and 41 and 6 a 41 and 1 laine. The a Dresses as a second and a 1 |    |

Here they both call him. The Drawer stands amazed, not knowing which way to go.

Enter Vintner.

| FTLN 1071<br>FTLN 1072<br>FTLN 1073<br>FTLN 1074 | VINTNER What, stand'st thou still and hear'st such a calling? Look to the guests within. <i>Francis exits</i> . My lord, old Sir John with half a dozen more are at the door. Shall I let them in? | 85  |
|--|--|-----|
| FTLN 1075<br>FTLN 1076                           | PRINCE Let them alone awhile, and then open the door. \( \subseteq \text{Vintner exits.} \) Poins!   |     |
|  | Enter Poins.   |     |
| FTLN 1077  | POINS Anon, anon, sir.   |     |
| FTLN 1078  | PRINCE Sirrah, Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are  | 90  |
| FTLN 1079  | at the door. Shall we be merry?  |     |
| FTLN 1080  | POINS As merry as crickets, my lad. But hark you,  |     |
| FTLN 1081  | what cunning match have you made with this jest  |     |
| FTLN 1082  | of the drawer. Come, what's the issue?   |     |
| FTLN 1083  | PRINCE I am now of all humors that have showed   | 95  |
| FTLN 1084  | themselves humors since the old days of Goodman  |     |
| FTLN 1085  | Adam to the pupil age of this present twelve   |     |
| FTLN 1086  | o'clock at midnight.   |     |
|  | 「Enter Francis, in haste.  |     |
| FTLN 1087  | What's o'clock, Francis?   |     |
| FTLN 1088  | FRANCIS Anon, anon, sir.   | 100 |
| FTLN 1089  | PRINCE That ever this fellow should have fewer words   |     |
| FTLN 1090  | than a parrot, and yet the son of a woman! His   |     |
| FTLN 1091  | industry is upstairs and downstairs, his eloquence   |     |
| FTLN 1092  | the parcel of a reckoning. I am not yet of Percy's   |     |
| FTLN 1093  | mind, the Hotspur of the north, he that kills me   | 105 |
| FTLN 1094  | some six or seven dozen of Scots at a breakfast,   |     |
| FTLN 1095  | washes his hands, and says to his wife "Fie upon   |     |
| FTLN 1096  | this quiet life! I want work." "O my sweet Harry,"   |     |
| FTLN 1097  | says she, "how many hast thou killed today?"   |     |
| FTLN 1098  | "Give my roan horse a drench," says he, and answers  | 110 |
| FTLN 1099  | "Some fourteen," an hour after. "A trifle, a   |     |
| FTLN 1100  | trifle." I prithee, call in Falstaff. I'll play Percy,   |     |
| FTLN 1101  | and that damned brawn shall play Dame Mortimer   |     |
| FTLN 1102  | his wife. "Rivo!" says the drunkard. Call in   |     |
|  | Ribs, call in Tallow.  | 115 |

## Enter Falstaff, 「Gadshill, Peto, Bardolph; and Francis, with wine.

| FTLN 1104 | POINS Welcome, Jack. Where hast thou been?                  |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1105 | FALSTAFF A plague of all cowards, I say, and a vengeance    |     |
| FTLN 1106 | too! Marry and amen!—Give me a cup of                       |     |
| FTLN 1107 | sack, boy.—Ere I lead this life long, I'll sew netherstocks |     |
| FTLN 1108 | and mend them, and foot them too. A plague                  | 120 |
| FTLN 1109 | of all cowards!—Give me a cup of sack, rogue!—Is            |     |
| FTLN 1110 | there no virtue extant? He drinketh.                        |     |
| FTLN 1111 | PRINCE Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dish of            |     |
| FTLN 1112 | butter—pitiful-hearted Titan!—that melted at the            |     |
| FTLN 1113 | sweet tale of the sun's? If thou didst, then behold         | 125 |
| FTLN 1114 | that compound.  |     |
| FTLN 1115 | FALSTAFF, <i>to Francis</i> You rogue, here's lime in this  |     |
| FTLN 1116 | sack too.—There is nothing but roguery to be                |     |
| FTLN 1117 | found in villainous man, yet a coward is worse than         |     |
| FTLN 1118 | a cup of sack with lime in it. A villainous coward! Go      | 130 |
| FTLN 1119 | thy ways, old Jack. Die when thou wilt. If manhood,         |     |
| FTLN 1120 | good manhood, be not forgot upon the face of the            |     |
| FTLN 1121 | Earth, then am I a shotten herring. There lives not         |     |
| FTLN 1122 | three good men unhanged in England, and one of              |     |
| FTLN 1123 | them is fat and grows old, God help the while. A bad        | 135 |
| FTLN 1124 | world, I say. I would I were a weaver. I could sing         |     |
| FTLN 1125 | psalms, or anything. A plague of all cowards, I say         |     |
| FTLN 1126 | still.  |     |
| FTLN 1127 | PRINCE How now, woolsack, what mutter you?                  |     |
| FTLN 1128 | FALSTAFF A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of thy     | 140 |
| FTLN 1129 | kingdom with a dagger of lath, and drive all thy            |     |
| FTLN 1130 | subjects afore thee like a flock of wild geese, I'll        |     |
| FTLN 1131 | never wear hair on my face more. You, Prince of             |     |
| FTLN 1132 | Wales!  |     |
| FTLN 1133 | PRINCE Why, you whoreson round man, what's the              | 145 |
| FTLN 1134 | matter?   |     |
| FTLN 1135 | FALSTAFF Are not you a coward? Answer me to that—           |     |
| FTLN 1136 | and Poins there?  |     |

| FILN 1139 FALSTAFF I call thee coward? I'll see thee damned ere FILN 1140 J Could run as fast as thou canst. You are FILN 1141 pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are FILN 1142 straight enough in the shoulders you care not who FILN 1143 sees your back. Call you that backing of your 155 FILN 1144 friends? A plague upon such backing! Give me them FILN 1145 that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack.—I am a FILN 1146 rogue if I drunk today. FILN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou FILN 1148 drunk'st last. FILN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of FILN 1150 all cowards, still say I. FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter? FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it? FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man? FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword FILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have FILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through FILN 1161 the doublet, four through, my sword hacked like FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since FILN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Fointing to Gadshill, FILN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or FILN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of FILN 1168 FARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen. FILN 1169 FARDOLPH And bound them.              | FTLN 1137<br>FTLN 1138 | POINS Zounds, you fat paunch, an you call me coward, by the Lord, I'll stab thee. | 150 |
|--|------------------------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1141 pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are FTLN 1142 straight enough in the shoulders you care not who FTLN 1143 sees your back. Call you that backing of your 155 FTLN 1144 friends? A plague upon such backing! Give me them FTLN 1145 that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack.—I am a FTLN 1146 rogue if I drunk today. FTLN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou FTLN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of FTLN 1150 all cowards, still say I. FTLN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter? FTLN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? FTLN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. FTLN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it? FTLN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred FTLN 1156 upon poor four of us. FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man? FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword FTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have FTLN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through FTLN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler FTLN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like FTLN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of FTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Fointing to Gadshill, FTLN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of FTLN 1168 farm 170 Speak, sirs, how was it? FTLN 1169 FPRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FTLN 1160 FPRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FTLN 1161 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord. | FTLN 1139              | FALSTAFF I call thee coward? I'll see thee damned ere                             |     |
| FTLN 1142  | FTLN 1140              | I call thee coward, but I would give a thousand                                   |     |
| FILN 1143 sees your back. Call you that backing of your friends? A plague upon such backing! Give me them that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack.—I am a rogue if I drunk today.  FILN 1146 rogue if I drunk today.  FILN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunk'st last.  FILN 1148 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of all cowards, still say I.  FILN 1150 PRINCE What's the matter?  FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter? There be four of us here have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.  FILN 1153 FALSTAFF Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  FILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  FILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FILN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FILN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FILN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FILN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FILN 1168 darkness. 180  FILN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1160 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1141              | pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are                                  |     |
| FILN 1144 friends? A plague upon such backing! Give me them FILN 1145 that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack.—I am a FILN 1146 rogue if I drunk today. FILN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou FILN 1148 drunk'st last. 160 FILN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of FILN 1150 all cowards, still say I. FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter? FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. 165 FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it? FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred FILN 1156 upon poor four of us. FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man? FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170 FILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have FILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through FILN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler FILN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175 FILN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Fointing to Gadshill, FILN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or FILN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of FILN 1168 darkness. 180 FILN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FILN 1169 FRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FILN 1160 FRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FILN 1170 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen. FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1142              | straight enough in the shoulders you care not who                                 |     |
| FTLN 1145 that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack.—I am a rogue if I drunk today.  FTLN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunk'st last. 160  FTLN 1148 drunk'st last. 160  FTLN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of all cowards, still say I.  FTLN 1150 PRINCE What's the matter?  FTLN 1151 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FTLN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FTLN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. 165  FTLN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FTLN 1155 FALSTAFF Whate is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  upon poor four of us.  FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FTLN 1158 LASTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  FTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  FTLN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FTLN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FTLN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175  FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. "Pointing to Gadshill,  FTLN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto." If they speak more or  FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FTLN 1168 darkness. 180  FTLN 1169 "PRINCE" Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 "BARDOLPH" We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1143              | •   | 155 |
| FILN 1146 rogue if I drunk today.  FILN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou  FILN 1148 drunk'st last. 160  FILN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of  FILN 1150 all cowards, still say I.  FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter?  FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. 165  FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  FILN 1156 upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  FILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  FILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FILN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FILN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175  FILN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FILN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FILN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FILN 1168 darkness. 180  FILN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1144              |   |     |
| FILN 1147 PRINCE O villain, thy lips are scarce wiped since thou  FILN 1148 drunk'st last. 160  FILN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of  FILN 1150 all cowards, still say I.  FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter?  FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. 165  FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  upon poor four of us.  FILN 1156 upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  FILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FILN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FILN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175  FILN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FILN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FILN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  Garkness. 180  FILN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1145              | <del>-</del>  |     |
| FTLN 1148 drunk'st last. 160  FTLN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of all cowards, still say I.  FTLN 1150 all cowards, still say I.  FTLN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter?  FTLN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here FTLN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning. 165  FTLN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FTLN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred upon poor four of us.  FTLN 1156 upon poor four of us.  FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  With a dozen of them two hours together. I have 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FTLN 1160 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FTLN 1161 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FTLN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FTLN 1168 darkness. 180  FPRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1146              | <del>-</del>  |     |
| FILN 1149 FALSTAFF All is one for that. (He drinketh.) A plague of  FILN 1150 all cowards, still say I.  FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter?  FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.  FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  FILN 1156 upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  FILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  FILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FILN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FILN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. *Pointing to Gadshill,  Bardolph, and Peto.* If they speak more or  FILN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FILN 1168 darkness.  180  **FILN 1169 PRINCE** Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 **FALSTAFF** Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1147              |   |     |
| all cowards, still say I.  FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter?  FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.  FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  upon poor four of us.  FILN 1156 upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  TILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FILN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  I less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  darkness.  180  FPRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1148              |   | 160 |
| FILN 1151 PRINCE What's the matter?  FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  FILN 1153 have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.  FILN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  TILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  TILN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FILN 1161 the doublet, four through, my sword hacked like  a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FILN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  darkness. 180  FPIN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1149              | · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·   |     |
| FILN 1152 FALSTAFF What's the matter? There be four of us here  have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.  PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FILN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  upon poor four of us.  FILN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FILN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  TILN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  cut through and through, my sword hacked like  a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FILN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  darkness.  Thin 1169 Prince Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1150              | •   |     |
| have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.  FTLN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FTLN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  upon poor four of us.  FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  TTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  Cut through and through, my sword hacked like  TTLN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  TTLN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  TTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  TTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  I less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  TTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1169 Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1151              |   |     |
| FTLN 1154 PRINCE Where is it, Jack, where is it?  FTLN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  Upon poor four of us.  FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  FTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FTLN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FTLN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FTLN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1160 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1152              |   |     |
| FTLN 1155 FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred  ### Upon poor four of us.  ### PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  ### FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  ### FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  ### With a dozen of them two hours together. I have  ### is caped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  ### ### it is cut through and through the hose, my buckler  ### ### it is cut through and through, my sword hacked like  ### ### it is cut through and through, my sword hacked like  ### a handsaw. ** ** ** ** ** ** ** ** ** ** ** ** **   | FTLN 1153              | <u> </u>  | 165 |
| FTLN 1156 upon poor four of us.  FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword 170  FTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  FTLN 1160 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1161 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FTLN 1162 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FTLN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175  FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FTLN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FTLN 1168 darkness. 180  FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1154              |   |     |
| FTLN 1157 PRINCE What, a hundred, man?  FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  FTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  FTLN 1160 the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FTLN 1161 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FTLN 1163 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1165 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FTLN 1166 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  FTLN 1168 darkness.  FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1155              | FALSTAFF Where is it? Taken from us it is. A hundred                              |     |
| FTLN 1158 FALSTAFF I am a rogue if I were not at half-sword  FTLN 1159 with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through  the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  FTLN 1161 cut through and through, my sword hacked like  FTLN 1162 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  FTLN 1163 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  FTLN 1164 all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  FTLN 1165 Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  Garkness.  FTLN 1168 Garkness.  FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 FBARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1156              | 1 1   |     |
| with a dozen of them two hours together. I have  'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler  cut through and through, my sword hacked like  a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  darkness.  PRIN 1169  PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170  BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171  FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1157              |   |     |
| rtln 1160 scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler cut through and through, my sword hacked like rtln 1162 a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill, Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness. 180  FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1158              | <u> </u>  | 170 |
| the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler cut through and through, my sword hacked like a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since I was a man. All would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill, Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness.  FILN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FILN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FILN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1159              |   |     |
| cut through and through, my sword hacked like a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since 175  FTLN 1164 I was a man. All would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill, Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of FTLN 1167 I less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of FTLN 1168 FTLN 1169 FRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FTLN 1170  BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen. FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1160              |   |     |
| FTLN 1163  a handsaw. Ecce signum! I never dealt better since  I was a man. All would not do. A plague of  all cowards! Let them speak. Pointing to Gadshill,  Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or  less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of  the darkness.  FTLN 1169  PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170  BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171  FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1161              |   |     |
| I was a man. All would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak. *Pointing to Gadshill, Bardolph, and Peto.* If they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness.  FILN 1168   | FTLN 1162              |   |     |
| all cowards! Let them speak. *Pointing to Gadshill, Bardolph, and Peto.* If they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness. 180  FTLN 1169  | FTLN 1163              | 8   | 175 |
| FTLN 1166  Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness.  FTLN 1169  FRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170  BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171  FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1164              |   |     |
| FTLN 1167 less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of FTLN 1168 darkness. 180 FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it? FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen. FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1165              | 1   |     |
| FTLN 1168 darkness. 180  FTLN 1169 PRINCE Speak, sirs, how was it?  FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1166              | Bardolph, and Peto. If they speak more or   |     |
| FTLN 1169  | FTLN 1167              | less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of                               |     |
| FTLN 1170 BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.  FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   | FTLN 1168              | darkness.   | 180 |
| FTLN 1171 FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.  | FTLN 1169              | Speak, sirs, how was it?  |     |
|  | FTLN 1170              | BARDOLPH We four set upon some dozen.   |     |
|  | FTLN 1171              | FALSTAFF Sixteen at least, my lord.   |     |
|  | FTLN 1172              |   |     |

| FTLN 1173 | PETO No, no, they were not bound.                             | 185 |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1174 | FALSTAFF You rogue, they were bound, every man of             |     |
| FTLN 1175 | them, or I am a Jew else, an Ebrew Jew.                       |     |
| FTLN 1176 | TBARDOLPH As we were sharing, some six or seven               |     |
| FTLN 1177 | fresh men set upon us.  |     |
| FTLN 1178 | FALSTAFF And unbound the rest, and then come in the           | 190 |
| FTLN 1179 | other.  |     |
| FTLN 1180 | PRINCE What, fought you with them all?                        |     |
| FTLN 1181 | FALSTAFF All? I know not what you call all, but if I          |     |
| FTLN 1182 | fought not with fifty of them I am a bunch of                 |     |
| FTLN 1183 | radish. If there were not two- or three-and-fifty             | 195 |
| FTLN 1184 | upon poor old Jack, then am I no two-legged                   |     |
| FTLN 1185 | creature.   |     |
| FTLN 1186 | PRINCE Pray God you have not murdered some of                 |     |
| FTLN 1187 | them.   |     |
| FTLN 1188 | FALSTAFF Nay, that's past praying for. I have peppered        | 200 |
| FTLN 1189 | two of them. Two I am sure I have paid, two rogues            |     |
| FTLN 1190 | in buckram suits. I tell thee what, Hal, if I tell thee a     |     |
| FTLN 1191 | lie, spit in my face, call me horse. Thou knowest my          |     |
| FTLN 1192 | old ward. Here I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four          |     |
| FTLN 1193 | rogues in buckram let drive at me.                            | 205 |
| FTLN 1194 | PRINCE What, four? Thou said'st but two even now.             |     |
| FTLN 1195 | FALSTAFF Four, Hal, I told thee four.                         |     |
| FTLN 1196 | POINS Ay, ay, he said four.                                   |     |
| FTLN 1197 | FALSTAFF These four came all afront, and mainly               |     |
| FTLN 1198 | thrust at me. I made me no more ado, but took all             | 210 |
| FTLN 1199 | their seven points in my target, thus.                        |     |
| FTLN 1200 | PRINCE Seven? Why there were but four even now.               |     |
| FTLN 1201 | FALSTAFF In buckram?  |     |
| FTLN 1202 | POINS Ay, four in buckram suits.                              |     |
| FTLN 1203 | FALSTAFF Seven by these hilts, or I am a villain else.        | 215 |
| FTLN 1204 | PRINCE, <i>to Poins</i> Prithee, let him alone. We shall have |     |
| FTLN 1205 | more anon.  |     |
| FTLN 1206 | FALSTAFF Dost thou hear me, Hal?                              |     |
| FTLN 1207 | PRINCE Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.                           |     |

| FTLN 1208 | FALSTAFF Do so, for it is worth the listening to. These    | 220 |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 1209 | nine in buckram that I told thee of—                       |     |
| FTLN 1210 | PRINCE So, two more already.                               |     |
| FTLN 1211 | FALSTAFF Their points being broken—                        |     |
| FTLN 1212 | POINS Down fell their hose.                                |     |
| FTLN 1213 | FALSTAFF Began to give me ground, but I followed me        | 225 |
| FTLN 1214 | close, came in foot and hand, and, with a thought,         |     |
| FTLN 1215 | seven of the eleven I paid.                                |     |
| FTLN 1216 | PRINCE O monstrous! Eleven buckram men grown out           |     |
| FTLN 1217 | of two!  |     |
| FTLN 1218 | FALSTAFF But as the devil would have it, three misbegotten | 230 |
| FTLN 1219 | knaves in Kendal green came at my back,                    |     |
| FTLN 1220 | and let drive at me, for it was so dark, Hal, that thou    |     |
| FTLN 1221 | couldst not see thy hand.                                  |     |
| FTLN 1222 | PRINCE These lies are like their father that begets        |     |
| FTLN 1223 | them, gross as a mountain, open, palpable. Why,            | 235 |
| FTLN 1224 | thou claybrained guts, thou knotty-pated fool, thou        |     |
| FTLN 1225 | whoreson, obscene, greasy tallow-catch—                    |     |
| FTLN 1226 | FALSTAFF What, art thou mad? Art thou mad? Is not          |     |
| FTLN 1227 | the truth the truth?                                       |     |
| FTLN 1228 | PRINCE Why, how couldst thou know these men in             | 240 |
| FTLN 1229 | Kendal green when it was so dark thou couldst not          |     |
| FTLN 1230 | see thy hand? Come, tell us your reason. What sayest       |     |
| FTLN 1231 | thou to this?  |     |
| FTLN 1232 | POINS Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.                |     |
| FTLN 1233 | FALSTAFF What, upon compulsion? Zounds, an I were          | 245 |
| FTLN 1234 | at the strappado or all the racks in the world, I          |     |
| FTLN 1235 | would not tell you on compulsion. Give you a               |     |
| FTLN 1236 | reason on compulsion? If reasons were as plentiful         |     |
| FTLN 1237 | as blackberries, I would give no man a reason upon         |     |
| FTLN 1238 | compulsion, I.   | 250 |
| FTLN 1239 | PRINCE I'll be no longer guilty of this sin. This sanguine |     |
| FTLN 1240 | coward, this bed-presser, this horse-backbreaker,          |     |
| FTLN 1241 | this huge hill of flesh—                                   |     |
| FTLN 1242 | FALSTAFF 'Sblood, you starveling, you elfskin, you         |     |
| FTLN 1243 | dried neat's tongue, you bull's pizzle, you stockfish!     | 255 |

| FTLN 1244 | O, for breath to utter what is like thee! You tailor's |       |
|-----------|--|-------|
| FTLN 1245 | yard, you sheath, you bowcase, you vile standing       |       |
| FTLN 1246 | tuck—  |       |
| FTLN 1247 | PRINCE Well, breathe awhile, and then to it again, and |       |
| FTLN 1248 | when thou hast tired thyself in base comparisons,      | 260   |
| FTLN 1249 | hear me speak but this.                                |       |
| FTLN 1250 | POINS Mark, Jack.                                      |       |
| FTLN 1251 | PRINCE We two saw you four set on four, and bound      |       |
| FTLN 1252 | them and were masters of their wealth. Mark now        |       |
| FTLN 1253 | how a plain tale shall put you down. Then did we       | 265   |
| FTLN 1254 | two set on you four and, with a word, outfaced you     |       |
| FTLN 1255 | from your prize, and have it, yea, and can show it     |       |
| FTLN 1256 | you here in the house. And, Falstaff, you carried      |       |
| FTLN 1257 | your guts away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity,     |       |
| FTLN 1258 | and roared for mercy, and still run and roared, as     | 270   |
| FTLN 1259 | ever I heard bull-calf. What a slave art thou to hack  |       |
| FTLN 1260 | thy sword as thou hast done, and then say it was in    |       |
| FTLN 1261 | fight! What trick, what device, what starting-hole     |       |
| FTLN 1262 | canst thou now find out to hide thee from this open    |       |
| FTLN 1263 | and apparent shame?                                    | 275   |
| FTLN 1264 | POINS Come, let's hear, Jack. What trick hast thou     |       |
| FTLN 1265 | now?   |       |
| FTLN 1266 | FALSTAFF By the Lord, I knew you as well as he that    |       |
| FTLN 1267 | made you. Why, hear you, my masters, was it for        |       |
| FTLN 1268 | me to kill the heir apparent? Should I turn upon the   | 280   |
| FTLN 1269 | true prince? Why, thou knowest I am as valiant as      |       |
| FTLN 1270 | Hercules, but beware instinct. The lion will not       |       |
| FTLN 1271 | touch the true prince. Instinct is a great matter.     |       |
| FTLN 1272 | I was now a coward on instinct. I shall think          |       |
| FTLN 1273 | the better of myself, and thee, during my life—        | 285   |
| FTLN 1274 | I for a valiant lion, and thou for a true prince.      |       |
| FTLN 1275 | But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the         |       |
| FTLN 1276 | money.—Hostess, clap to the doors.—Watch tonight,      |       |
| FTLN 1277 | pray tomorrow. Gallants, lads, boys, hearts            | • • • |
| FTLN 1278 | of gold, all the titles of good fellowship come to     | 290   |
| FTLN 1279 | you. What, shall we be merry? Shall we have a play     |       |
| FTLN 1280 | extempore?   |       |

| FTLN 1281 | PRINCE Content, and the argument shall be thy running         |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1282 | away.   |     |
| FTLN 1283 | FALSTAFF Ah, no more of that, Hal, an thou lovest me.         | 295 |
|           |   |     |
|           | Enter Hostess.  |     |
| FTLN 1284 | HOSTESS O Jesu, my lord the Prince—                           |     |
| FTLN 1285 | PRINCE How now, my lady the hostess, what sayst thou          |     |
| FTLN 1286 | to me?  |     |
| FTLN 1287 | HOSTESS Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the            |     |
| FTLN 1288 | court at door would speak with you. He says he                | 300 |
| FTLN 1289 | comes from your father.                                       |     |
| FTLN 1290 | PRINCE Give him as much as will make him a royal              |     |
| FTLN 1291 | man and send him back again to my mother.                     |     |
| FTLN 1292 | FALSTAFF What manner of man is he?                            |     |
| FTLN 1293 | HOSTESS An old man.   | 305 |
| FTLN 1294 | FALSTAFF What doth Gravity out of his bed at midnight?        |     |
| FTLN 1295 | Shall I give him his answer?                                  |     |
| FTLN 1296 | PRINCE Prithee do, Jack.                                      |     |
| FTLN 1297 | FALSTAFF Faith, and I'll send him packing. He exits.          |     |
| FTLN 1298 | PRINCE Now, sirs. <i>To Gadshill</i> . By 'r Lady, you fought | 310 |
| FTLN 1299 | fair.—So did you, Peto.—So did you, Bardolph.—                |     |
| FTLN 1300 | You are lions too. You ran away upon instinct. You            |     |
| FTLN 1301 | will not touch the true prince. No, fie!                      |     |
| FTLN 1302 | BARDOLPH Faith, I ran when I saw others run.                  |     |
| FTLN 1303 | PRINCE Faith, tell me now in earnest, how came Falstaff's     | 315 |
| FTLN 1304 | sword so hacked?  |     |
| FTLN 1305 | PETO Why, he hacked it with his dagger and said he            |     |
| FTLN 1306 | would swear truth out of England but he would                 |     |
| FTLN 1307 | make you believe it was done in fight, and persuaded          |     |
| FTLN 1308 | us to do the like.  | 320 |
| FTLN 1309 | BARDOLPH Yea, and to tickle our noses with speargrass         |     |
| FTLN 1310 | to make them bleed, and then to beslubber our                 |     |
| FTLN 1311 | garments with it, and swear it was the blood of true          |     |
| FTLN 1312 | men. I did that I did not this seven year before: I           |     |
| FTLN 1313 | blushed to hear his monstrous devices.                        | 325 |
| FTLN 1314 | PRINCE O villain, thou stolest a cup of sack eighteen         |     |

| FTLN 1315 FTLN 1316 FTLN 1317 FTLN 1318 FTLN 1319 FTLN 1320 FTLN 1321 FTLN 1322 FTLN 1322 FTLN 1323 FTLN 1324 FTLN 1325 | years ago, and wert taken with the manner, and ever since thou hast blushed extempore. Thou hadst fire and sword on thy side, and yet thou ran'st away. What instinct hadst thou for it?  BARDOLPH My lord, do you see these meteors? Do you behold these exhalations?  PRINCE I do.  BARDOLPH What think you they portend?  PRINCE Hot livers and cold purses.  BARDOLPH Choler, my lord, if rightly taken.  PRINCE No. If rightly taken, halter. | 330<br>335 |
|---|--|------------|
|   | Enter Falstaff.  |            |
| FTLN 1326   | Here comes lean Jack. Here comes bare-bone.—   |            |
| FTLN 1327   | How now, my sweet creature of bombast? How long  |            |
| FTLN 1328   | is 't ago, Jack, since thou sawest thine own knee?   | 340        |
| FTLN 1329   | FALSTAFF My own knee? When I was about thy years,  |            |
| FTLN 1330   | Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist. I could  |            |
| FTLN 1331   | have crept into any alderman's thumb-ring. A   |            |
| FTLN 1332   | plague of sighing and grief! It blows a man up like a  |            |
| FTLN 1333   | bladder. There's villainous news abroad. Here was  | 345        |
| FTLN 1334   | Sir John Bracy from your father. You must to the   |            |
| FTLN 1335   | court in the morning. That same mad fellow of the  |            |
| FTLN 1336   | north, Percy, and he of Wales that gave Amamon the   |            |
| FTLN 1337   | bastinado, and made Lucifer cuckold, and swore   |            |
| FTLN 1338   | the devil his true liegeman upon the cross of a  | 350        |
| FTLN 1339   | Welsh hook—what a plague call you him?   |            |
| FTLN 1340   | POINS Owen Glendower.  |            |
| FTLN 1341   | FALSTAFF Owen, Owen, the same, and his son-in-law  |            |
| FTLN 1342   | Mortimer, and old Northumberland, and that   |            |
| FTLN 1343   | sprightly Scot of Scots, Douglas, that runs a-horseback  | 355        |
| FTLN 1344   | up a hill perpendicular—   |            |
| FTLN 1345   | PRINCE He that rides at high speed, and with his pistol  |            |
| FTLN 1346   | kills a sparrow flying.  |            |
| FTLN 1347   | FALSTAFF You have hit it.  | 260        |
| FTLN 1348   | PRINCE So did he never the sparrow.  | 360        |

| FTLN 1349 | FALSTAFF Well, that rascal hath good mettle in him. He    |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1350 | will not run.   |     |
| FTLN 1351 | PRINCE Why, what a rascal art thou then to praise him     |     |
| FTLN 1352 | so for running?   |     |
| FTLN 1353 | FALSTAFF A-horseback, you cuckoo, but afoot he will       | 365 |
| FTLN 1354 | not budge a foot.   |     |
| FTLN 1355 | PRINCE Yes, Jack, upon instinct.                          |     |
| FTLN 1356 | FALSTAFF I grant you, upon instinct. Well, he is there    |     |
| FTLN 1357 | too, and one Mordake, and a thousand blue-caps            |     |
| FTLN 1358 | more. Worcester is stolen away tonight. Thy father's      | 370 |
| FTLN 1359 | beard is turned white with the news. You may buy          |     |
| FTLN 1360 | land now as cheap as stinking mackerel.                   |     |
| FTLN 1361 | PRINCE Why then, it is like if there come a hot June,     |     |
| FTLN 1362 | and this civil buffeting hold, we shall buy maidenheads   |     |
| FTLN 1363 | as they buy hobnails, by the hundreds.                    | 375 |
| FTLN 1364 | FALSTAFF By the Mass, thou sayest true. It is like we     |     |
| FTLN 1365 | shall have good trading that way. But tell me, Hal,       |     |
| FTLN 1366 | art not thou horrible afeard? Thou being heir             |     |
| FTLN 1367 | apparent, could the world pick thee out three such        |     |
| FTLN 1368 | enemies again as that fiend Douglas, that spirit          | 380 |
| FTLN 1369 | Percy, and that devil Glendower? Art thou not             |     |
| FTLN 1370 | horribly afraid? Doth not thy blood thrill at it?         |     |
| FTLN 1371 | PRINCE Not a whit, i' faith. I lack some of thy instinct. |     |
| FTLN 1372 | FALSTAFF Well, thou wilt be horribly chid tomorrow        |     |
| FTLN 1373 | when thou comest to thy father. If thou love me,          | 385 |
| FTLN 1374 | practice an answer.                                       |     |
| FTLN 1375 | PRINCE Do thou stand for my father and examine me         |     |
| FTLN 1376 | upon the particulars of my life.                          |     |
| FTLN 1377 | FALSTAFF Shall I? Content. He sits down. This chair       |     |
| FTLN 1378 | shall be my state, this dagger my scepter, and this       | 390 |
| FTLN 1379 | cushion my crown.   |     |
| FTLN 1380 | PRINCE Thy state is taken for a joined stool, thy golden  |     |
| FTLN 1381 | scepter for a leaden dagger, and thy precious rich        |     |
| FTLN 1382 | crown for a pitiful bald crown.                           |     |
| FTLN 1383 | FALSTAFF Well, an the fire of grace be not quite out of   | 395 |
| FTLN 1384 | thee, now shalt thou be moved.—Give me a cup of           |     |

| FTLN 1385 | sack to make my eyes look red, that it may be             |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1386 | thought I have wept, for I must speak in passion,         |     |
| FTLN 1387 | and I will do it in King Cambyses' vein.                  |     |
| FTLN 1388 | PRINCE, bowing Well, here is my leg.                      | 400 |
| FTLN 1389 | FALSTAFF And here is my speech. [As King.] Stand          |     |
| FTLN 1390 | aside, nobility.  |     |
| FTLN 1391 | HOSTESS O Jesu, this is excellent sport, i' faith!        |     |
|           | FALSTAFF, as King   |     |
| FTLN 1392 | Weep not, sweet queen, for trickling tears are vain.      |     |
| FTLN 1393 | HOSTESS O the Father, how he holds his countenance!       | 405 |
|           | FALSTAFF, [as King]                                       |     |
| FTLN 1394 | For God's sake, lords, convey my [tristful] queen,        |     |
| FTLN 1395 | For tears do stop the floodgates of her eyes.             |     |
| FTLN 1396 | HOSTESS O Jesu, he doth it as like one of these harlotry  |     |
| FTLN 1397 | players as ever I see.                                    |     |
| FTLN 1398 | FALSTAFF Peace, good pint-pot. Peace, good tickle-brain.— | 410 |
| FTLN 1399 | [As King.] Harry, I do not only marvel                    |     |
| FTLN 1400 | where thou spendest thy time, but also how thou           |     |
| FTLN 1401 | art accompanied. For though the camomile, the             |     |
| FTLN 1402 | more it is trodden on, the faster it grows, so youth,     |     |
| FTLN 1403 | the more it is wasted, the sooner it wears. That          | 415 |
| FTLN 1404 | thou art my son I have partly thy mother's word,          |     |
| FTLN 1405 | partly my own opinion, but chiefly a villainous           |     |
| FTLN 1406 | trick of thine eye and a foolish hanging of thy           |     |
| FTLN 1407 | nether lip that doth warrant me. If then thou be          |     |
| FTLN 1408 | son to me, here lies the point: why, being son to         | 420 |
| FTLN 1409 | me, art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed sun of      |     |
| FTLN 1410 | heaven prove a micher and eat blackberries? A             |     |
| FTLN 1411 | question not to be asked. Shall the son of England        |     |
| FTLN 1412 | prove a thief and take purses? A question to be           |     |
| FTLN 1413 | asked. There is a thing, Harry, which thou hast           | 425 |
| FTLN 1414 | often heard of, and it is known to many in our land       |     |
| FTLN 1415 | by the name of pitch. This pitch, as ancient writers      |     |
| FTLN 1416 | do report, doth defile; so doth the company thou          |     |
| FTLN 1417 | keepest. For, Harry, now I do not speak to thee in        |     |
| FTLN 1418 | drink, but in tears; not in pleasure, but in passion;     | 430 |

| FTLN 1419 | not in words only, but in woes also. And yet there is      |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 1420 | a virtuous man whom I have often noted in thy              |     |
| FTLN 1421 | company, but I know not his name.                          |     |
| FTLN 1422 | PRINCE What manner of man, an it like your Majesty?        |     |
| FTLN 1423 | FALSTAFF, [as King] A goodly portly man, i' faith, and a   | 435 |
| FTLN 1424 | corpulent; of a cheerful look, a pleasing eye, and a       |     |
| FTLN 1425 | most noble carriage, and, as I think, his age some         |     |
| FTLN 1426 | fifty, or, by 'r Lady, inclining to threescore; and now    |     |
| FTLN 1427 | I remember me, his name is Falstaff. If that man           |     |
| FTLN 1428 | should be lewdly given, he deceiveth me, for, Harry,       | 440 |
| FTLN 1429 | I see virtue in his looks. If then the tree may be         |     |
| FTLN 1430 | known by the fruit, as the fruit by the tree, then         |     |
| FTLN 1431 | peremptorily I speak it: there is virtue in that           |     |
| FTLN 1432 | Falstaff; him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me      |     |
| FTLN 1433 | now, thou naughty varlet, tell me where hast thou          | 445 |
| FTLN 1434 | been this month?   |     |
| FTLN 1435 | PRINCE Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for      |     |
| FTLN 1436 | me, and I'll play my father.                               |     |
| FTLN 1437 | FALSTAFF, <i>rising</i> Depose me? If thou dost it half so |     |
| FTLN 1438 | gravely, so majestically, both in word and matter,         | 450 |
| FTLN 1439 | hang me up by the heels for a rabbit-sucker or a           |     |
| FTLN 1440 | poulter's hare.  |     |
| FTLN 1441 | PRINCE, <i>sitting down</i> Well, here I am set.           |     |
| FTLN 1442 | FALSTAFF And here I stand.—Judge, my masters.              |     |
| FTLN 1443 | PRINCE, [as King] Now, Harry, whence come you?             | 455 |
| FTLN 1444 | FALSTAFF, [as Prince] My noble lord, from Eastcheap.       |     |
| FTLN 1445 | PRINCE, as King The complaints I hear of thee are          |     |
| FTLN 1446 | grievous.  |     |
| FTLN 1447 | FALSTAFF, [as Prince] 'Sblood, my lord, they are false.    |     |
| FTLN 1448 | —Nay, I'll tickle you for a young prince, i' faith.        | 460 |
| FTLN 1449 | PRINCE, [as King] Swearest thou? Ungracious boy,           |     |
| FTLN 1450 | henceforth ne'er look on me. Thou art violently            |     |
| FTLN 1451 | carried away from grace. There is a devil haunts           |     |
| FTLN 1452 | thee in the likeness of an old fat man. A tun of man       |     |
| FTLN 1453 | is thy companion. Why dost thou converse with that         | 465 |
| FTLN 1454 | trunk of humors, that bolting-hutch of beastliness,        |     |

| FTLN 1455 | that swollen parcel of dropsies, that huge bombard        |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1456 | of sack, that stuffed cloakbag of guts, that roasted      |     |
| FTLN 1457 | Manningtree ox with the pudding in his belly, that        |     |
| FTLN 1458 | reverend Vice, that gray iniquity, that father ruffian,   | 470 |
| FTLN 1459 | that vanity in years? Wherein is he good, but to taste    |     |
| FTLN 1460 | sack and drink it? Wherein neat and cleanly but to        |     |
| FTLN 1461 | carve a capon and eat it? Wherein cunning but in          |     |
| FTLN 1462 | craft? Wherein crafty but in villainy? Wherein villainous |     |
| FTLN 1463 | but in all things? Wherein worthy but in                  | 475 |
| FTLN 1464 | nothing?  |     |
| FTLN 1465 | FALSTAFF, [as Prince] I would your Grace would take       |     |
| FTLN 1466 | me with you. Whom means your Grace?                       |     |
| FTLN 1467 | PRINCE, [as King] That villainous abominable misleader    |     |
| FTLN 1468 | of youth, Falstaff, that old white-bearded Satan.         | 480 |
| FTLN 1469 | FALSTAFF, [as Prince] My lord, the man I know.            |     |
| FTLN 1470 | PRINCE, as King I know thou dost.                         |     |
| FTLN 1471 | FALSTAFF, [as Prince] But to say I know more harm in      |     |
| FTLN 1472 | him than in myself were to say more than I know.          |     |
| FTLN 1473 | That he is old, the more the pity; his white hairs do     | 485 |
| FTLN 1474 | witness it. But that he is, saving your reverence, a      |     |
| FTLN 1475 | whoremaster, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar       |     |
| FTLN 1476 | be a fault, God help the wicked. If to be old and         |     |
| FTLN 1477 | merry be a sin, then many an old host that I know is      |     |
| FTLN 1478 | damned. If to be fat be to be hated, then Pharaoh's       | 490 |
| FTLN 1479 | [lean] kine are to be loved. No, my good lord,            |     |
| FTLN 1480 | banish Peto, banish Bardolph, banish Poins, but for       |     |
| FTLN 1481 | sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack        |     |
| FTLN 1482 | Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more       |     |
| FTLN 1483 | valiant being as he is old Jack Falstaff, banish not      | 495 |
| FTLN 1484 | him thy Harry's company, banish not him thy               |     |
| FTLN 1485 | Harry's company. Banish plump Jack, and banish            |     |
| FTLN 1486 | all the world.  |     |
| FTLN 1487 | PRINCE I do, I will.                                      |     |
|           |   |     |

<sup>T</sup>A loud knocking, and Bardolph, Hostess, and Francis exit.

### Enter Bardolph running.

| FTLN 1488<br>FTLN 1489<br>FTLN 1490<br>FTLN 1491 | BARDOLPH O my lord, my lord, the Sheriff with a most monstrous watch is at the door.  FALSTAFF Out, you rogue.—Play out the play. I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff. | 500 |
|--|--|-----|
|  | Enter the Hostess.   |     |
| FTLN 1492  | HOSTESS O Jesu, my lord, my lord—  |     |
| FTLN 1493  | PRINCE Heigh, heigh, the devil rides upon a fiddlestick.   | 505 |
| FTLN 1494  | What's the matter?   |     |
| FTLN 1495  | HOSTESS The Sheriff and all the watch are at the door.   |     |
| FTLN 1496  | They are come to search the house. Shall I let them  |     |
| FTLN 1497  | in?  |     |
| FTLN 1498  | FALSTAFF Dost thou hear, Hal? Never call a true piece  | 510 |
| FTLN 1499  | of gold a counterfeit. Thou art essentially made   |     |
| FTLN 1500  | without seeming so.  |     |
| FTLN 1501  | PRINCE And thou a natural coward without instinct.   |     |
| FTLN 1502  | FALSTAFF I deny your major. If you will deny the   |     |
| FTLN 1503  | Sheriff, so; if not, let him enter. If I become not a  | 515 |
| FTLN 1504  | cart as well as another man, a plague on my  |     |
| FTLN 1505  | bringing up. I hope I shall as soon be strangled with  |     |
| FTLN 1506  | a halter as another.   |     |
| FTLN 1507  | PRINCE, <i>standing</i> Go hide thee behind the arras. The   |     |
| FTLN 1508  | rest walk up above.—Now, my masters, for a true  | 520 |
| FTLN 1509  | face and good conscience.  |     |
| FTLN 1510  | FALSTAFF Both which I have had, but their date is out;   |     |
| FTLN 1511  | and therefore I'll hide me.  |     |
| FTLN 1512  | PRINCE Call in the Sheriff.  |     |
|  | [All but the Prince and Peto exit.]  |     |
|  | Enter Sheriff and the Carrier.   |     |
|  | PRINCE   |     |
| FTLN 1513  | Now, Master Sheriff, what is your will with me? SHERIFF  | 525 |
| FTLN 1514  | First pardon me, my lord. A hue and cry  |     |
| FTLN 1515  | Hath followed certain men unto this house.   |     |

| FTLN 1516 | PRINCE What men?                                       |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
|           | SHERIFF  |     |
| FTLN 1517 | One of them is well known, my gracious lord.           |     |
| FTLN 1518 | A gross fat man.                                       | 530 |
| FTLN 1519 | CARRIER As fat as butter. PRINCE                       |     |
| FTLN 1520 | The man I do assure you is not here,                   |     |
| FTLN 1521 | For I myself at this time have employed him.           |     |
| FTLN 1522 | And, sheriff, I will engage my word to thee            |     |
| FTLN 1523 | That I will by tomorrow dinner time                    | 535 |
| FTLN 1524 | Send him to answer thee or any man                     |     |
| FTLN 1525 | For anything he shall be charged withal.               |     |
| FTLN 1526 | And so let me entreat you leave the house.             |     |
|           | SHERIFF  |     |
| FTLN 1527 | I will, my lord. There are two gentlemen               |     |
| FTLN 1528 | Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks.         | 540 |
|           | PRINCE   |     |
| FTLN 1529 | It may be so. If he have robbed these men,             |     |
| FTLN 1530 | He shall be answerable; and so farewell.               |     |
| FTLN 1531 | SHERIFF Good night, my noble lord.                     |     |
|           | PRINCE   |     |
| FTLN 1532 | I think it is good morrow, is it not?                  |     |
|           | SHERIFF  |     |
| FTLN 1533 | Indeed, my lord, I think it be two o'clock.            | 545 |
|           | He exits \( \text{with the Carrier.} \)                |     |
| FTLN 1534 | PRINCE This oily rascal is known as well as Paul's. Go |     |
| FTLN 1535 | call him forth.  |     |
| FTLN 1536 | PETO Falstaff!—Fast asleep behind the arras, and       |     |
| FTLN 1537 | snorting like a horse.                                 |     |
| FTLN 1538 | PRINCE Hark, how hard he fetches breath. Search his    | 550 |
| FTLN 1539 | pockets. (He searcheth his pocket, and findeth certain |     |
| FTLN 1540 | papers.) What hast thou found?                         |     |
| FTLN 1541 | PETO Nothing but papers, my lord.                      |     |
| FTLN 1542 | PRINCE Let's see what they be. Read them.              |     |
|           | PETO reads   |     |
| FTLN 1543 | Item, a capon, 2s. 2d.                                 | 555 |

| FTLN 1544 | Item, sauce, 4d.                                       |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 1545 | Item, sack, two gallons, 5s. 8d.                       |     |
| FTLN 1546 | Item, anchovies and sack after supper, 2s. 6d.         |     |
| FTLN 1547 | Item, bread,ob.  |     |
| FTLN 1548 | 「PRINCE」 O monstrous! But one halfpennyworth of        | 560 |
| FTLN 1549 | bread to this intolerable deal of sack? What there is  |     |
| FTLN 1550 | else, keep close. We'll read it at more advantage.     |     |
| FTLN 1551 | There let him sleep till day. I'll to the court in the |     |
| FTLN 1552 | morning. We must all to the wars, and thy place        |     |
| FTLN 1553 | shall be honorable. I'll procure this fat rogue a      | 565 |
| FTLN 1554 | charge of foot, and I know his death will be a march   |     |
| FTLN 1555 | of twelve score. The money shall be paid back again    |     |
| FTLN 1556 | with advantage. Be with me betimes in the morning,     |     |
| FTLN 1557 | and so good morrow, Peto.                              |     |
| FTLN 1558 | PETO Good morrow, good my lord.                        | 570 |
|           | They exit.   |     |

# Scene 1 Enter Hotspur, Worcester, Lord Mortimer, and Owen Glendower.

### **MORTIMER** These promises are fair, the parties sure, FTLN 1559 And our induction full of prosperous hope. FTLN 1560 **HOTSPUR** Lord Mortimer and cousin Glendower, FTLN 1561 Will you sit down? And uncle Worcester— FTLN 1562 A plague upon it, I have forgot the map. 5 FTLN 1563 **GLENDOWER** No, here it is. Sit, cousin Percy, FTLN 1564 Sit, good cousin Hotspur, for by that name FTLN 1565 As oft as Lancaster doth speak of you FTLN 1566 His cheek looks pale, and with a rising sigh FTLN 1567 He wisheth you in heaven. 10 FTLN 1568 FTLN 1569 **HOTSPUR** And you in hell, As oft as he hears Owen Glendower spoke of. FTLN 1570 **GLENDOWER** I cannot blame him. At my nativity FTLN 1571 The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes, FTLN 1572 Of burning cressets, and at my birth 15 FTLN 1573 The frame and huge foundation of the Earth FTLN 1574 Shaked like a coward. FTLN 1575 **HOTSPUR** Why, so it would have done FTLN 1576

| FTLN 1577 | At the same season if your mother's cat              |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 1578 | Had but kittened, though yourself had never been     | 20 |
| FTLN 1579 | born.  |    |
|           | GLENDOWER  |    |
| FTLN 1580 | I say the Earth did shake when I was born.           |    |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 1581 | And I say the Earth was not of my mind,              |    |
| FTLN 1582 | If you suppose as fearing you it shook.              |    |
|           | GLENDOWER  |    |
| FTLN 1583 | The heavens were all on fire; the Earth did tremble. | 25 |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 1584 | O, then the Earth shook to see the heavens on fire,  |    |
| FTLN 1585 | And not in fear of your nativity.                    |    |
| FTLN 1586 | Diseasèd nature oftentimes breaks forth              |    |
| FTLN 1587 | In strange eruptions; oft the teeming Earth          |    |
| FTLN 1588 | Is with a kind of colic pinched and vexed            | 30 |
| FTLN 1589 | By the imprisoning of unruly wind                    |    |
| FTLN 1590 | Within her womb, which, for enlargement striving,    |    |
| FTLN 1591 | Shakes the old beldam Earth and topples down         |    |
| FTLN 1592 | Steeples and moss-grown towers. At your birth        |    |
| FTLN 1593 | Our grandam Earth, having this distemp'rature,       | 35 |
| FTLN 1594 | In passion shook.                                    |    |
| FTLN 1595 | GLENDOWER Cousin, of many men                        |    |
| FTLN 1596 | I do not bear these crossings. Give me leave         |    |
| FTLN 1597 | To tell you once again that at my birth              |    |
| FTLN 1598 | The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,        | 40 |
| FTLN 1599 | The goats ran from the mountains, and the herds      |    |
| FTLN 1600 | Were strangely clamorous to the frighted fields.     |    |
| FTLN 1601 | These signs have marked me extraordinary,            |    |
| FTLN 1602 | And all the courses of my life do show               |    |
| FTLN 1603 | I am not in the roll of common men.                  | 45 |
| FTLN 1604 | Where is he living, clipped in with the sea          |    |
| FTLN 1605 | That chides the banks of England, Scotland, Wales,   |    |
| FTLN 1606 | Which calls me pupil or hath read to me?             |    |
| FTLN 1607 | And bring him out that is but woman's son            |    |
| FTLN 1608 | Can trace me in the tedious ways of art              | 50 |
| FTLN 1609 | And hold me pace in deep experiments.                |    |

|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 1610 | I think there's no man speaks better Welsh.        |    |
| FTLN 1611 | I'll to dinner.                                    |    |
|           | MORTIMER   |    |
| FTLN 1612 | Peace, cousin Percy. You will make him mad.        |    |
|           | GLENDOWER  |    |
| FTLN 1613 | I can call spirits from the vasty deep.            | 55 |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 1614 | Why, so can I, or so can any man,                  |    |
| FTLN 1615 | But will they come when you do call for them?      |    |
|           | GLENDOWER  |    |
| FTLN 1616 | Why, I can teach you, cousin, to command the       |    |
| FTLN 1617 | devil.   |    |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 1618 | And I can teach thee, coz, to shame the devil      | 60 |
| FTLN 1619 | By telling truth. Tell truth and shame the devil.  |    |
| FTLN 1620 | If thou have power to raise him, bring him hither, |    |
| FTLN 1621 | And I'll be sworn I have power to shame him        |    |
| FTLN 1622 | hence.   |    |
| FTLN 1623 | O, while you live, tell truth and shame the devil! | 65 |
|           | MORTIMER   |    |
| FTLN 1624 | Come, come, no more of this unprofitable chat.     |    |
|           | GLENDOWER  |    |
| FTLN 1625 | Three times hath Henry Bolingbroke made head       |    |
| FTLN 1626 | Against my power; thrice from the banks of Wye     |    |
| FTLN 1627 | And sandy-bottomed Severn have I sent him          |    |
| FTLN 1628 | Bootless home and weather-beaten back.             | 70 |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 1629 | Home without boots, and in foul weather too!       |    |
| FTLN 1630 | How 'scapes he agues, in the devil's name?         |    |
|           | GLENDOWER  |    |
| FTLN 1631 | Come, here is the map. Shall we divide our right   |    |
| FTLN 1632 | According to our threefold order ta'en?            |    |
|           | MORTIMER   |    |
| FTLN 1633 | The Archdeacon hath divided it                     | 75 |
| FTLN 1634 | Into three limits very equally:                    |    |

| England, from Trent and Severn hitherto,           | FTLN 1635 |
|--|-----------|
| By south and east is to my part assigned;          | FTLN 1636 |
| All westward, Wales beyond the Severn shore,       | FTLN 1637 |
| And all the fertile land within that bound 80      | FTLN 1638 |
| To Owen Glendower; and, dear coz, to you           | FTLN 1639 |
| The remnant northward lying off from Trent.        | FTLN 1640 |
| And our indentures tripartite are drawn,           | FTLN 1641 |
| Which being sealed interchangeably—                | FTLN 1642 |
| A business that this night may execute— 85         | FTLN 1643 |
| Tomorrow, cousin Percy, you and I                  | FTLN 1644 |
| And my good Lord of Worcester will set forth       | FTLN 1645 |
| To meet your father and the Scottish power,        | FTLN 1646 |
| As is appointed us, at Shrewsbury.                 | FTLN 1647 |
| My father Glendower is not ready yet, 90           | FTLN 1648 |
| Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days.    | FTLN 1649 |
| To Glendower. Within that space you may have       | FTLN 1650 |
| drawn together                                     | FTLN 1651 |
| Your tenants, friends, and neighboring gentlemen.  | FTLN 1652 |
| GLENDOWER  |           |
| A shorter time shall send me to you, lords, 95     | FTLN 1653 |
| And in my conduct shall your ladies come,          | FTLN 1654 |
| From whom you now must steal and take no leave,    | FTLN 1655 |
| For there will be a world of water shed            | FTLN 1656 |
| Upon the parting of your wives and you.            | FTLN 1657 |
| HOTSPUR, [looking at the map]                      |           |
| Methinks my moiety, north from Burton here, 100    | FTLN 1658 |
| In quantity equals not one of yours.               | FTLN 1659 |
| See how this river comes me cranking in            | FTLN 1660 |
| And cuts me from the best of all my land           | FTLN 1661 |
| A huge half-moon, a monstrous cantle out.          | FTLN 1662 |
| I'll have the current in this place dammed up, 105 | FTLN 1663 |
| And here the smug and silver Trent shall run       | FTLN 1664 |
| In a new channel, fair and evenly.                 | FTLN 1665 |
| It shall not wind with such a deep indent          | FTLN 1666 |
|  | FTLN 1667 |
| · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·              | FTLN 1666 |

|              | GLENDOWER  |      |
|--------------|--|------|
| FTLN 1668    | Not wind? It shall, it must. You see it doth.                                      | 110  |
|              | MORTIMER, To Hotspur   | 110  |
| FTLN 1669    | Yea, but mark how he bears his course, and runs                                    |      |
| FTLN 1670    | me up  |      |
| FTLN 1671    | With like advantage on the other side,   |      |
| FTLN 1672    | Gelding the opposèd continent as much  |      |
| FTLN 1673    | As on the other side it takes from you.  | 115  |
|              | WORCESTER  |      |
| FTLN 1674    | Yea, but a little charge will trench him here                                      |      |
| FTLN 1675    | And on this north side win this cape of land,                                      |      |
| FTLN 1676    | And then he runs straight and even.  |      |
|              | HOTSPUR  |      |
| FTLN 1677    | I'll have it so. A little charge will do it.                                       |      |
| FTLN 1678    | GLENDOWER I'll not have it altered.  | 120  |
| FTLN 1679    | HOTSPUR Will not you?  |      |
| FTLN 1680    | GLENDOWER No, nor you shall not.   |      |
| FTLN 1681    | HOTSPUR Who shall say me nay?  |      |
| FTLN 1682    | GLENDOWER Why, that will I.  |      |
|              | HOTSPUR  |      |
| FTLN 1683    | Let me not understand you, then; speak it in Welsh.                                | 125  |
|              | GLENDOWER  |      |
| FTLN 1684    | I can speak English, lord, as well as you,   |      |
| FTLN 1685    | For I was trained up in the English court,   |      |
| FTLN 1686    | Where being but young I framed to the harp   |      |
| FTLN 1687    | Many an English ditty lovely well  | 1.20 |
| FTLN 1688    | And gave the tongue a helpful ornament—  | 130  |
| FTLN 1689    | A virtue that was never seen in you.   |      |
| TTT 37.4.600 | Morro and Law alad of it with all my boost   |      |
| FTLN 1690    | Marry, and I am glad of it with all my heart.                                      |      |
| FTLN 1691    | I had rather be a kitten and cry "mew"   |      |
| FTLN 1692    | Than one of these same [meter] balladmongers.                                      | 125  |
| FTLN 1693    | I had rather hear a brazen can'stick turned,                                       | 135  |
| FTLN 1694    | Or a dry wheel grate on the axletree,  |      |
| FTLN 1695    | And that would set my teeth nothing an edge,                                       |      |
| FTLN 1696    | Nothing so much as mincing poetry.  'Tis like the forced gait of a shuffling page. |      |
| FTLN 1697    | 'Tis like the forced gait of a shuffling nag.                                      |      |

| FTLN 1698 | GLENDOWER Come, you shall have Trent turned.     |           | 140 |
|-----------|--|-----------|-----|
|           | HOTSPUR  |           | 1.0 |
| FTLN 1699 | I do not care. I'll give thrice so much land     |           |     |
| FTLN 1700 | To any well-deserving friend;                    |           |     |
| FTLN 1701 | But in the way of bargain, mark you me,          |           |     |
| FTLN 1702 | I'll cavil on the ninth part of a hair.          |           |     |
| FTLN 1703 | Are the indentures drawn? Shall we be gone?      |           | 145 |
|           | GLENDOWER  |           |     |
| FTLN 1704 | The moon shines fair. You may away by night.     |           |     |
| FTLN 1705 | I'll haste the writer, and withal                |           |     |
| FTLN 1706 | Break with your wives of your departure hence.   |           |     |
| FTLN 1707 | I am afraid my daughter will run mad,            |           |     |
| FTLN 1708 | So much she doteth on her Mortimer.              | He exits. | 150 |
|           | MORTIMER   |           |     |
| FTLN 1709 | Fie, cousin Percy, how you cross my father!      |           |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |           |     |
| FTLN 1710 | I cannot choose. Sometime he angers me           |           |     |
| FTLN 1711 | With telling me of the moldwarp and the ant,     |           |     |
| FTLN 1712 | Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies,        |           |     |
| FTLN 1713 | And of a dragon and a finless fish,              |           | 155 |
| FTLN 1714 | A clip-winged griffin and a moulten raven,       |           |     |
| FTLN 1715 | A couching lion and a ramping cat,               |           |     |
| FTLN 1716 | And such a deal of skimble-skamble stuff         |           |     |
| FTLN 1717 | As puts me from my faith. I tell you what—       |           |     |
| FTLN 1718 | He held me last night at least nine hours        |           | 160 |
| FTLN 1719 | In reckoning up the several devils' names        |           |     |
| FTLN 1720 | That were his lackeys. I cried "Hum," and "Well, | go        |     |
| FTLN 1721 | to,"   |           |     |
| FTLN 1722 | But marked him not a word. O, he is as tedious   |           |     |
| FTLN 1723 | As a tired horse, a railing wife,                |           | 165 |
| FTLN 1724 | Worse than a smoky house. I had rather live      |           |     |
| FTLN 1725 | With cheese and garlic in a windmill, far,       |           |     |
| FTLN 1726 | Than feed on cates and have him talk to me       |           |     |
| FTLN 1727 | In any summer house in Christendom.              |           |     |
|           | MORTIMER   |           |     |
| FTLN 1728 | In faith, he is a worthy gentleman,              |           | 170 |

| FTLN 1729 | Exceedingly well read and profited               |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 1730 | In strange concealments, valiant as a lion,      |     |
| FTLN 1731 | And wondrous affable, and as bountiful           |     |
| FTLN 1732 | As mines of India. Shall I tell you, cousin?     |     |
| FTLN 1733 | He holds your temper in a high respect           | 175 |
| FTLN 1734 | And curbs himself even of his natural scope      |     |
| FTLN 1735 | When you come cross his humor. Faith, he does.   |     |
| FTLN 1736 | I warrant you that man is not alive              |     |
| FTLN 1737 | Might so have tempted him as you have done       |     |
| FTLN 1738 | Without the taste of danger and reproof.         | 180 |
| FTLN 1739 | But do not use it oft, let me entreat you.       |     |
|           | WORCESTER, [to Hotspur]                          |     |
| FTLN 1740 | In faith, my lord, you are too willful-blame,    |     |
| FTLN 1741 | And, since your coming hither, have done enough  |     |
| FTLN 1742 | To put him quite besides his patience.           |     |
| FTLN 1743 | You must needs learn, lord, to amend this fault. | 185 |
| FTLN 1744 | Though sometimes it show greatness, courage,     |     |
| FTLN 1745 | blood—   |     |
| FTLN 1746 | And that's the dearest grace it renders you—     |     |
| FTLN 1747 | Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage,       |     |
| FTLN 1748 | Defect of manners, want of government,           | 190 |
| FTLN 1749 | Pride, haughtiness, opinion, and disdain,        |     |
| FTLN 1750 | The least of which, haunting a nobleman,         |     |
| FTLN 1751 | Loseth men's hearts and leaves behind a stain    |     |
| FTLN 1752 | Upon the beauty of all parts besides,            |     |
| FTLN 1753 | Beguiling them of commendation.                  | 195 |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 1754 | Well, I am schooled. Good manners be your speed! |     |
| FTLN 1755 | Here come our wives, and let us take our leave.  |     |
|           | Enter Glendower with the Ladies.                 |     |
|           |  |     |
|           | MORTIMER   |     |
| FTLN 1756 | This is the deadly spite that angers me:         |     |
| FTLN 1757 | My wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.        |     |
|           | GLENDOWER  |     |
| FTLN 1758 | My daughter weeps; she'll not part with you.     | 200 |
| FTLN 1759 | She'll be a soldier too, she'll to the wars.     |     |

| FTLN 1760<br>FTLN 1761 | MORTIMER Good father, tell her that she and my aunt Percy Shall follow in your conduct speedily. |     |
|------------------------|--|-----|
|                        | Glendower speaks to her in Welsh,  |     |
|                        | and she answers him in the same.   |     |
|                        | GLENDOWER 11 16 11 11 1  |     |
| FTLN 1762              | She is desperate here, a peevish self-willed harlotry,   | 205 |
| FTLN 1763              | One that no persuasion can do good upon.  The Lady speaks in Welsh.                              | 205 |
|                        | MORTIMER   |     |
| FTLN 1764              | I understand thy looks. That pretty Welsh  |     |
| FTLN 1765              | Which thou pourest down from these swelling  |     |
| FTLN 1766              | heavens  |     |
| FTLN 1767              | I am too perfect in, and but for shame   |     |
| FTLN 1768              | In such a parley should I answer thee.   | 210 |
|                        | The Lady speaks again in Welsh. They kiss.   |     |
| FTLN 1769              | I understand thy kisses, and thou mine,  |     |
| FTLN 1770              | And that's a feeling disputation;  |     |
| FTLN 1771              | But I will never be a truant, love,  |     |
| FTLN 1772              | Till I have learned thy language; for thy tongue   |     |
| FTLN 1773              | Makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penned,   | 215 |
| FTLN 1774              | Sung by a fair queen in a summer's bower,  |     |
| FTLN 1775              | With ravishing division, to her lute.  |     |
|                        | GLENDOWER  |     |
| FTLN 1776              | Nay, if you melt, then will she run mad.   |     |
|                        | The Lady speaks again in Welsh.  |     |
|                        | MORTIMER   |     |
| FTLN 1777              | O, I am ignorance itself in this!  |     |
|                        | GLENDOWER  |     |
| FTLN 1778              | She bids you on the wanton rushes lay you down   | 220 |
| FTLN 1779              | And rest your gentle head upon her lap,  |     |
| FTLN 1780              | And she will sing the song that pleaseth you,  |     |
| FTLN 1781              | And on your eyelids crown the god of sleep,  |     |
| FTLN 1782              | Charming your blood with pleasing heaviness,   | A   |
| FTLN 1783              | Making such difference 'twixt wake and sleep   | 225 |
| FTLN 1784              | As is the difference betwixt day and night   |     |

| FTLN 1785 | The hour before the heavenly harnessed team        |     |  |
|-----------|--|-----|--|
| FTLN 1786 | Begins his golden progress in the east.            |     |  |
| 1121(1700 | MORTIMER   |     |  |
| FTLN 1787 | With all my heart I'll sit and hear her sing.      |     |  |
| FTLN 1788 | By that time will our book, I think, be drawn.     | 230 |  |
|           | GLENDOWER  |     |  |
| FTLN 1789 | Do so, and those musicians that shall play to you  |     |  |
| FTLN 1790 | Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence,     |     |  |
| FTLN 1791 | And straight they shall be here. Sit and attend.   |     |  |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |  |
| FTLN 1792 | Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down.        |     |  |
| FTLN 1793 | Come, quick, quick, that I may lay my head in thy  | 235 |  |
| FTLN 1794 | lap.   |     |  |
| FTLN 1795 | LADY PERCY Go, you giddy goose.                    |     |  |
|           | The music plays.                                   |     |  |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |  |
| FTLN 1796 | Now I perceive the devil understands Welsh,        |     |  |
| FTLN 1797 | And 'tis no marvel he is so humorous.              |     |  |
| FTLN 1798 | By 'r Lady, he is a good musician.                 | 240 |  |
| FTLN 1799 | LADY PERCY Then should you be nothing but musical, |     |  |
| FTLN 1800 | for you are altogether governed by humors. Lie     |     |  |
| FTLN 1801 | still, you thief, and hear the lady sing in Welsh. |     |  |
| FTLN 1802 | HOTSPUR I had rather hear Lady, my brach, howl in  |     |  |
| FTLN 1803 | Irish.   | 245 |  |
| FTLN 1804 | LADY PERCY Wouldst thou have thy head broken?      |     |  |
| FTLN 1805 | HOTSPUR No.  |     |  |
| FTLN 1806 | LADY PERCY Then be still.                          |     |  |
| FTLN 1807 | HOTSPUR Neither; 'tis a woman's fault.             |     |  |
| FTLN 1808 | LADY PERCY Now God help thee!                      | 250 |  |
| FTLN 1809 | HOTSPUR To the Welsh lady's bed.                   |     |  |
| FTLN 1810 | LADY PERCY What's that?                            |     |  |
| FTLN 1811 | HOTSPUR Peace, she sings.                          |     |  |
|           | Here the Lady sings a Welsh song.                  |     |  |
| FTLN 1812 | HOTSPUR Come, Kate, I'll have your song too.       | -   |  |
| FTLN 1813 | LADY PERCY Not mine, in good sooth.                | 255 |  |
| FTLN 1814 | HOTSPUR Not yours, in good sooth! Heart, you swear |     |  |

| FTLN 1815 | like a comfit-maker's wife! "Not you, in good             |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1816 | sooth," and "as true as I live," and "as God shall        |     |
| FTLN 1817 | mend me," and "as sure as day"—                           |     |
| FTLN 1818 | And givest such sarcenet surety for thy oaths             | 260 |
| FTLN 1819 | As if thou never walk'st further than Finsbury.           |     |
| FTLN 1820 | Swear me, Kate, like a lady as thou art,                  |     |
| FTLN 1821 | A good mouth-filling oath, and leave "in sooth,"          |     |
| FTLN 1822 | And such protest of pepper-gingerbread                    |     |
| FTLN 1823 | To velvet-guards and Sunday citizens.                     | 265 |
| FTLN 1824 | Come, sing.   |     |
| FTLN 1825 | LADY PERCY I will not sing.                               |     |
| FTLN 1826 | HOTSPUR 'Tis the next way to turn tailor, or be redbreast |     |
| FTLN 1827 | teacher. An the indentures be drawn, I'll                 |     |
| FTLN 1828 | away within these two hours, and so come in when          | 270 |
| FTLN 1829 | you will. He exits.                                       |     |
|           | GLENDOWER   |     |
| FTLN 1830 | Come, come, Lord Mortimer, you are as slow                |     |
| FTLN 1831 | As hot Lord Percy is on fire to go.                       |     |
| FTLN 1832 | By this our book is drawn. We'll but seal,                |     |
| FTLN 1833 | And then to horse immediately.                            | 275 |
| FTLN 1834 | MORTIMER With all my heart.                               |     |
|           | They exit.  |     |

## Scene 2 Enter the King, Prince of Wales, and others.

### **KING** Lords, give us leave; the Prince of Wales and I FTLN 1835 Must have some private conference, but be near at FTLN 1836 hand, FTLN 1837 For we shall presently have need of you. FTLN 1838 Lords exit. I know not whether God will have it so 5 FTLN 1839 For some displeasing service I have done, FTLN 1840 That, in His secret doom, out of my blood FTLN 1841

| FTLN 1842 | He'll breed revengement and a scourge for me.   |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 1843 | But thou dost in thy passages of life           |    |
| FTLN 1844 | Make me believe that thou art only marked       | 10 |
| FTLN 1845 | For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven     |    |
| FTLN 1846 | To punish my mistreadings. Tell me else,        |    |
| FTLN 1847 | Could such inordinate and low desires,          |    |
| FTLN 1848 | Such poor, such bare, such lewd, such mean      |    |
| FTLN 1849 | attempts,                                       | 15 |
| FTLN 1850 | Such barren pleasures, rude society             |    |
| FTLN 1851 | As thou art matched withal, and grafted to,     |    |
| FTLN 1852 | Accompany the greatness of thy blood,           |    |
| FTLN 1853 | And hold their level with thy princely heart?   |    |
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 1854 | So please your Majesty, I would I could         | 20 |
| FTLN 1855 | Quit all offenses with as clear excuse          |    |
| FTLN 1856 | As well as I am doubtless I can purge           |    |
| FTLN 1857 | Myself of many I am charged withal.             |    |
| FTLN 1858 | Yet such extenuation let me beg                 |    |
| FTLN 1859 | As, in reproof of many tales devised,           | 25 |
| FTLN 1860 | Which oft the ear of greatness needs must hear, |    |
| FTLN 1861 | By smiling pickthanks and base newsmongers,     |    |
| FTLN 1862 | I may for some things true, wherein my youth    |    |
| FTLN 1863 | Hath faulty wandered and irregular,             |    |
| FTLN 1864 | Find pardon on my true submission.              | 30 |
|           | KING  |    |
| FTLN 1865 | God pardon thee. Yet let me wonder, Harry,      |    |
| FTLN 1866 | At thy affections, which do hold a wing         |    |
| FTLN 1867 | Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors.     |    |
| FTLN 1868 | Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost,     |    |
| FTLN 1869 | Which by thy younger brother is supplied,       | 35 |
| FTLN 1870 | And art almost an alien to the hearts           |    |
| FTLN 1871 | Of all the court and princes of my blood.       |    |
| FTLN 1872 | The hope and expectation of thy time            |    |
| FTLN 1873 | Is ruined, and the soul of every man            |    |
| FTLN 1874 | Prophetically do forethink thy fall.            | 40 |
| FTLN 1875 | Had I so lavish of my presence been,            |    |
|           |   |    |
|           |   |    |
|           |   |    |
|           |   |    |

| FTLN 1876 | So common-hackneyed in the eyes of men,            |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 1877 | So stale and cheap to vulgar company,              |    |
| FTLN 1878 | Opinion, that did help me to the crown,            |    |
| FTLN 1879 | Had still kept loyal to possession                 | 45 |
| FTLN 1880 | And left me in reputeless banishment,              |    |
| FTLN 1881 | A fellow of no mark nor likelihood.                |    |
| FTLN 1882 | By being seldom seen, I could not stir             |    |
| FTLN 1883 | But like a comet I was wondered at,                |    |
| FTLN 1884 | That men would tell their children "This is he."   | 50 |
| FTLN 1885 | Others would say "Where? Which is Bolingbroke?"    |    |
| FTLN 1886 | And then I stole all courtesy from heaven,         |    |
| FTLN 1887 | And dressed myself in such humility                |    |
| FTLN 1888 | That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts,     |    |
| FTLN 1889 | Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths,     | 55 |
| FTLN 1890 | Even in the presence of the crowned king.          |    |
| FTLN 1891 | Thus did I keep my person fresh and new,           |    |
| FTLN 1892 | My presence, like a robe pontifical,               |    |
| FTLN 1893 | Ne'er seen but wondered at, and so my state,       |    |
| FTLN 1894 | Seldom but sumptuous, showed like a feast          | 60 |
| FTLN 1895 | And won by rareness such solemnity.                |    |
| FTLN 1896 | The skipping king, he ambled up and down           |    |
| FTLN 1897 | With shallow jesters and rash bavin wits,          |    |
| FTLN 1898 | Soon kindled and soon burnt; carded his state,     |    |
| FTLN 1899 | Mingled his royalty with cap'ring fools,           | 65 |
| FTLN 1900 | Had his great name profaned with their scorns,     |    |
| FTLN 1901 | And gave his countenance, against his name,        |    |
| FTLN 1902 | To laugh at gibing boys and stand the push         |    |
| FTLN 1903 | Of every beardless vain comparative;               |    |
| FTLN 1904 | Grew a companion to the common streets,            | 70 |
| FTLN 1905 | Enfeoffed himself to popularity,                   |    |
| FTLN 1906 | That, being daily swallowed by men's eyes,         |    |
| FTLN 1907 | They surfeited with honey and began                |    |
| FTLN 1908 | To loathe the taste of sweetness, whereof a little |    |
| FTLN 1909 | More than a little is by much too much.            | 75 |
| FTLN 1910 | So, when he had occasion to be seen,               |    |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 1911 | He was but as the cuckoo is in June,               |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 1912 | Heard, not regarded; seen, but with such eyes      |     |
| FTLN 1913 | As, sick and blunted with community,               |     |
| FTLN 1914 | Afford no extraordinary gaze                       | 80  |
| FTLN 1915 | Such as is bent on sunlike majesty                 |     |
| FTLN 1916 | When it shines seldom in admiring eyes,            |     |
| FTLN 1917 | But rather drowsed and hung their eyelids down,    |     |
| FTLN 1918 | Slept in his face, and rendered such aspect        |     |
| FTLN 1919 | As cloudy men use to their adversaries,            | 85  |
| FTLN 1920 | Being with his presence glutted, gorged, and full. |     |
| FTLN 1921 | And in that very line, Harry, standest thou,       |     |
| FTLN 1922 | For thou hast lost thy princely privilege          |     |
| FTLN 1923 | With vile participation. Not an eye                |     |
| FTLN 1924 | But is aweary of thy common sight,                 | 90  |
| FTLN 1925 | Save mine, which hath desired to see thee more,    |     |
| FTLN 1926 | Which now doth that I would not have it do,        |     |
| FTLN 1927 | Make blind itself with foolish tenderness.         |     |
|           | PRINCE   |     |
| FTLN 1928 | I shall hereafter, my thrice gracious lord,        |     |
| FTLN 1929 | Be more myself.                                    | 95  |
| FTLN 1930 | KING For all the world                             |     |
| FTLN 1931 | As thou art to this hour was Richard then          |     |
| FTLN 1932 | When I from France set foot at Ravenspurgh,        |     |
| FTLN 1933 | And even as I was then is Percy now.               |     |
| FTLN 1934 | Now, by my scepter, and my soul to boot,           | 100 |
| FTLN 1935 | He hath more worthy interest to the state          |     |
| FTLN 1936 | Than thou, the shadow of succession.               |     |
| FTLN 1937 | For of no right, nor color like to right,          |     |
| FTLN 1938 | He doth fill fields with harness in the realm,     |     |
| FTLN 1939 | Turns head against the lion's armed jaws,          | 105 |
| FTLN 1940 | And, being no more in debt to years than thou,     |     |
| FTLN 1941 | Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on        |     |
| FTLN 1942 | To bloody battles and to bruising arms.            |     |
| FTLN 1943 | What never-dying honor hath he got                 |     |
| FTLN 1944 | Against renownèd Douglas, whose high deeds,        | 110 |
| FTLN 1945 | Whose hot incursions and great name in arms,       |     |
|           |  |     |

| FTLN 1946 | Holds from all soldiers chief majority            |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 1947 | And military title capital                        |     |
| FTLN 1948 | Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge Christ. |     |
| FTLN 1949 | Thrice hath this Hotspur, Mars in swaddling       | 115 |
| FTLN 1950 | clothes,  |     |
| FTLN 1951 | This infant warrior, in his enterprises           |     |
| FTLN 1952 | Discomfited great Douglas, ta'en him once,        |     |
| FTLN 1953 | Enlargèd him, and made a friend of him,           |     |
| FTLN 1954 | To fill the mouth of deep defiance up             | 120 |
| FTLN 1955 | And shake the peace and safety of our throne.     |     |
| FTLN 1956 | And what say you to this? Percy, Northumberland,  |     |
| FTLN 1957 | The Archbishop's Grace of York, Douglas,          |     |
| FTLN 1958 | Mortimer,   |     |
| FTLN 1959 | Capitulate against us and are up.                 | 125 |
| FTLN 1960 | But wherefore do I tell these news to thee?       |     |
| FTLN 1961 | Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes,            |     |
| FTLN 1962 | Which art my nearest and dearest enemy?           |     |
| FTLN 1963 | Thou that art like enough, through vassal fear,   |     |
| FTLN 1964 | Base inclination, and the start of spleen,        | 130 |
| FTLN 1965 | To fight against me under Percy's pay,            |     |
| FTLN 1966 | To dog his heels, and curtsy at his frowns,       |     |
| FTLN 1967 | To show how much thou art degenerate.             |     |
|           | PRINCE  |     |
| FTLN 1968 | Do not think so. You shall not find it so.        |     |
| FTLN 1969 | And God forgive them that so much have swayed     | 135 |
| FTLN 1970 | Your Majesty's good thoughts away from me.        |     |
| FTLN 1971 | I will redeem all this on Percy's head,           |     |
| FTLN 1972 | And, in the closing of some glorious day,         |     |
| FTLN 1973 | Be bold to tell you that I am your son,           |     |
| FTLN 1974 | When I will wear a garment all of blood           | 140 |
| FTLN 1975 | And stain my favors in a bloody mask,             |     |
| FTLN 1976 | Which, washed away, shall scour my shame with it. |     |
| FTLN 1977 | And that shall be the day, whene'er it lights,    |     |
| FTLN 1978 | That this same child of honor and renown,         |     |
| FTLN 1979 | This gallant Hotspur, this all-praised knight,    | 145 |
| FTLN 1980 | And your unthought-of Harry chance to meet.       |     |
|           |   |     |

| ACT  | 3  | SC  | 2 |
|------|----|-----|---|
| 1101 | ٥. | SC. | _ |

| FTLN 1981 | For every honor sitting on his helm,               |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 1982 | Would they were multitudes, and on my head         |     |
| FTLN 1983 | My shames redoubled! For the time will come        |     |
| FTLN 1984 | That I shall make this northern youth exchange     | 150 |
| FTLN 1985 | His glorious deeds for my indignities.             |     |
| FTLN 1986 | Percy is but my factor, good my lord,              |     |
| FTLN 1987 | To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf.         |     |
| FTLN 1988 | And I will call him to so strict account           |     |
| FTLN 1989 | That he shall render every glory up,               | 155 |
| FTLN 1990 | Yea, even the slightest worship of his time,       |     |
| FTLN 1991 | Or I will tear the reckoning from his heart.       |     |
| FTLN 1992 | This in the name of God I promise here,            |     |
| FTLN 1993 | The which if He be pleased I shall perform,        |     |
| FTLN 1994 | I do beseech your Majesty may salve                | 160 |
| FTLN 1995 | The long-grown wounds of my intemperance.          |     |
| FTLN 1996 | If not, the end of life cancels all bands,         |     |
| FTLN 1997 | And I will die a hundred thousand deaths           |     |
| FTLN 1998 | Ere break the smallest parcel of this vow.         |     |
|           | KING   |     |
| FTLN 1999 | A hundred thousand rebels die in this.             | 165 |
| FTLN 2000 | Thou shalt have charge and sovereign trust herein. |     |
|           |  |     |
|           | Enter Blunt.                                       |     |
|           |  |     |
| FTLN 2001 | How now, good Blunt? Thy looks are full of speed.  |     |
|           | BLUNT  |     |
| FTLN 2002 | So hath the business that I come to speak of.      |     |
| FTLN 2003 | Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word           |     |
| FTLN 2004 | That Douglas and the English rebels met            | 170 |
| FTLN 2005 | The eleventh of this month at Shrewsbury.          |     |
| FTLN 2006 | A mighty and a fearful head they are,              |     |
| FTLN 2007 | If promises be kept on every hand,                 |     |
| FTLN 2008 | As ever offered foul play in a state.              |     |
|           | KING   |     |
| FTLN 2009 | The Earl of Westmoreland set forth today,          | 175 |
| FTLN 2010 | With him my son, Lord John of Lancaster,           |     |
| FTLN 2011 | For this advertisement is five days old.—          |     |
|           | ·  |     |
|           |  |     |

| ACT 3. SC. 1 |
|--------------|
|--------------|

| FTLN 2012 | On Wednesday next, Harry, you shall set forward. |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 2013 | On Thursday we ourselves will march. Our meeting |     |
| FTLN 2014 | Is Bridgenorth. And, Harry, you shall march      | 180 |
| FTLN 2015 | Through Gloucestershire; by which account,       |     |
| FTLN 2016 | Our business valuèd, some twelve days hence      |     |
| FTLN 2017 | Our general forces at Bridgenorth shall meet.    |     |
| FTLN 2018 | Our hands are full of business. Let's away.      |     |
| FTLN 2019 | Advantage feeds him fat while men delay.         | 185 |
|           | They exit.                                       |     |
|           |  |     |

# Scene 3 Enter Falstaff and Bardolph.

| FALSTAFF Bardolph, am I not fallen away vilely since   |   |
|--|---|
| this last action? Do I not bate? Do I not dwindle?     |   |
| Why, my skin hangs about me like an old lady's         |   |
| loose gown. I am withered like an old applejohn.       |   |
| Well, I'll repent, and that suddenly, while I am in    | 5   |
| some liking. I shall be out of heart shortly, and then |   |
| I shall have no strength to repent. An I have not      |   |
| forgotten what the inside of a church is made of, I    |   |
| am a peppercorn, a brewer's horse. The inside of a     |   |
| church! Company, villainous company, hath been         | 10  |
| the spoil of me.                                       |   |
| BARDOLPH Sir John, you are so fretful you cannot live  |   |
| long.  |   |
| FALSTAFF Why, there is it. Come, sing me a bawdy       |   |
| song, make me merry. I was as virtuously given as a    | 15  |
| gentleman need to be, virtuous enough: swore           |   |
| little; diced not above seven times—a week; went to    |   |
| a bawdy house not above once in a quarter—of an        |   |
| hour; paid money that I borrowed—three or four         |   |
| times; lived well and in good compass; and now I       | 20  |
| live out of all order, out of all compass.             |   |
| BARDOLPH Why, you are so fat, Sir John, that you must  |   |
|  | this last action? Do I not bate? Do I not dwindle? Why, my skin hangs about me like an old lady's loose gown. I am withered like an old applejohn. Well, I'll repent, and that suddenly, while I am in some liking. I shall be out of heart shortly, and then I shall have no strength to repent. An I have not forgotten what the inside of a church is made of, I am a peppercorn, a brewer's horse. The inside of a church! Company, villainous company, hath been the spoil of me.  BARDOLPH Sir John, you are so fretful you cannot live long.  FALSTAFF Why, there is it. Come, sing me a bawdy song, make me merry. I was as virtuously given as a gentleman need to be, virtuous enough: swore little; diced not above seven times—a week; went to a bawdy house not above once in a quarter—of an hour; paid money that I borrowed—three or four times; lived well and in good compass; and now I live out of all order, out of all compass. |

| FTLN 2042 | needs be out of all compass, out of all reasonable           |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 2043 | compass, Sir John.   |    |
| FTLN 2044 | FALSTAFF Do thou amend thy face, and I'll amend my           | 25 |
| FTLN 2045 | life. Thou art our admiral, thou bearest the lantern         |    |
| FTLN 2046 | in the poop, but 'tis in the nose of thee. Thou art the      |    |
| FTLN 2047 | Knight of the Burning Lamp.                                  |    |
| FTLN 2048 | BARDOLPH Why, Sir John, my face does you no harm.            |    |
| FTLN 2049 | FALSTAFF No, I'll be sworn, I make as good use of it as      | 30 |
| FTLN 2050 | many a man doth of a death's-head or a memento               |    |
| FTLN 2051 | <i>mori</i> . I never see thy face but I think upon hellfire |    |
| FTLN 2052 | and Dives that lived in purple, for there he is in his       |    |
| FTLN 2053 | robes, burning, burning. If thou wert any way given          |    |
| FTLN 2054 | to virtue, I would swear by thy face. My oath should         | 35 |
| FTLN 2055 | be "By this fire, "that's" God's angel." But thou art        |    |
| FTLN 2056 | altogether given over, and wert indeed, but for the          |    |
| FTLN 2057 | light in thy face, the son of utter darkness. When           |    |
| FTLN 2058 | thou ran'st up Gad's Hill in the night to catch my           |    |
| FTLN 2059 | horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an ignis           | 40 |
| FTLN 2060 | fatuus, or a ball of wildfire, there's no purchase in        |    |
| FTLN 2061 | money. O, thou art a perpetual triumph, an everlasting       |    |
| FTLN 2062 | bonfire-light. Thou hast saved me a thousand                 |    |
| FTLN 2063 | marks in links and torches, walking with thee in the         |    |
| FTLN 2064 | night betwixt tavern and tavern, but the sack that           | 45 |
| FTLN 2065 | thou hast drunk me would have bought me lights as            |    |
| FTLN 2066 | good cheap at the dearest chandler's in Europe. I            |    |
| FTLN 2067 | have maintained that salamander of yours with fire           |    |
| FTLN 2068 | any time this two-and-thirty years, God reward me            |    |
| FTLN 2069 | for it.  | 50 |
| FTLN 2070 | BARDOLPH 'Sblood, I would my face were in your               |    |
| FTLN 2071 | belly!   |    |
| FTLN 2072 | FALSTAFF Godamercy, so should I be sure to be                |    |
| FTLN 2073 | heartburned!   |    |
|           |  |    |
|           | Enter Hostess.   |    |
|           |  |    |
| FTLN 2074 | How now, Dame Partlet the hen, have you enquired             | 55 |
| FTLN 2075 | yet who picked my pocket?                                    |    |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 2076 | HOSTESS Why, Sir John, what do you think, Sir John,          |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 2077 | do you think I keep thieves in my house? I have              |    |
| FTLN 2078 | searched, I have enquired, so has my husband,                |    |
| FTLN 2079 | man by man, boy by boy, servant by servant.                  | 60 |
| FTLN 2080 | The tithe of a hair was never lost in my house               |    |
| FTLN 2081 | before.  |    |
| FTLN 2082 | FALSTAFF You lie, hostess. Bardolph was shaved and           |    |
| FTLN 2083 | lost many a hair, and I'll be sworn my pocket was            |    |
| FTLN 2084 | picked. Go to, you are a woman, go.                          | 65 |
| FTLN 2085 | HOSTESS Who, I? No, I defy thee! God's light, I was          |    |
| FTLN 2086 | never called so in mine own house before.                    |    |
| FTLN 2087 | FALSTAFF Go to, I know you well enough.                      |    |
| FTLN 2088 | HOSTESS No, Sir John, you do not know me, Sir John. I        |    |
| FTLN 2089 | know you, Sir John. You owe me money, Sir John,              | 70 |
| FTLN 2090 | and now you pick a quarrel to beguile me of it. I            |    |
| FTLN 2091 | bought you a dozen of shirts to your back.                   |    |
| FTLN 2092 | FALSTAFF Dowlas, filthy dowlas. I have given them            |    |
| FTLN 2093 | away to bakers' wives; they have made bolters of             |    |
| FTLN 2094 | them.  | 75 |
| FTLN 2095 | HOSTESS Now, as I am a true woman, holland of eight          |    |
| FTLN 2096 | shillings an ell. You owe money here besides, Sir            |    |
| FTLN 2097 | John, for your diet and by-drinkings and money               |    |
| FTLN 2098 | lent you, four-and-twenty pound.                             |    |
| FTLN 2099 | FALSTAFF, <i>pointing to Bardolph</i> He had his part of it. | 80 |
| FTLN 2100 | Let him pay.   |    |
| FTLN 2101 | HOSTESS He? Alas, he is poor. He hath nothing.               |    |
| FTLN 2102 | FALSTAFF How, poor? Look upon his face. What call            |    |
| FTLN 2103 | you rich? Let them coin his nose. Let them coin his          |    |
| FTLN 2104 | cheeks. I'll not pay a denier. What, will you make a         | 85 |
| FTLN 2105 | younker of me? Shall I not take mine ease in mine            |    |
| FTLN 2106 | inn but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost a         |    |
| FTLN 2107 | seal ring of my grandfather's worth forty mark.              |    |
| FTLN 2108 | HOSTESS, <i>to Bardolph</i> O Jesu, I have heard the Prince  |    |
| FTLN 2109 | tell him, I know not how oft, that that ring was             | 90 |
| FTLN 2110 | copper.  |    |
| FTLN 2111 | FALSTAFF How? The Prince is a jack, a sneak-up.              |    |
|           |  |    |

| FTLN 2112<br>FTLN 2113 | 'Sblood, an he were here, I would cudgel him like a dog if he would say so.                          |     |
|------------------------|--|-----|
|                        | Enter the Prince marching, with Peto, and Falstaff meets him playing upon his truncheon like a fife. |     |
| FTLN 2114              | How now, lad, is the wind in that door, i' faith? Must   | 95  |
| FTLN 2115              | we all march?  |     |
| FTLN 2116              | BARDOLPH Yea, two and two, Newgate fashion.  |     |
| FTLN 2117              | HOSTESS, <i>to Prince</i> My lord, I pray you, hear me.  |     |
| FTLN 2118              | PRINCE What say'st thou, Mistress Quickly? How doth  |     |
| FTLN 2119              | thy husband? I love him well; he is an honest man.   | 100 |
| FTLN 2120              | HOSTESS Good my lord, hear me.   |     |
| FTLN 2121              | FALSTAFF Prithee, let her alone, and list to me.   |     |
| FTLN 2122              | PRINCE What say'st thou, Jack?   |     |
| FTLN 2123              | FALSTAFF The other night I fell asleep here, behind the  |     |
| FTLN 2124              | arras, and had my pocket picked. This house is   | 105 |
| FTLN 2125              | turned bawdy house; they pick pockets.   |     |
| FTLN 2126              | PRINCE What didst thou lose, Jack?   |     |
| FTLN 2127              | FALSTAFF Wilt thou believe me, Hal, three or four  |     |
| FTLN 2128              | bonds of forty pound apiece, and a seal ring of my   |     |
| FTLN 2129              | grandfather's.   | 110 |
| FTLN 2130              | PRINCE A trifle, some eightpenny matter.   |     |
| FTLN 2131              | HOSTESS So I told him, my lord, and I said I heard   |     |
| FTLN 2132              | your Grace say so. And, my lord, he speaks most  |     |
| FTLN 2133              | vilely of you, like a foul-mouthed man, as he is, and  |     |
| FTLN 2134              | said he would cudgel you.  | 115 |
| FTLN 2135              | PRINCE What, he did not!   |     |
| FTLN 2136              | HOSTESS There's neither faith, truth, nor womanhood  |     |
| FTLN 2137              | in me else.  |     |
| FTLN 2138              | FALSTAFF There's no more faith in thee than in a   |     |
| FTLN 2139              | stewed prune, nor no more truth in thee than in a  | 120 |
| FTLN 2140              | drawn fox, and for womanhood, Maid Marian may  |     |
| FTLN 2141              | be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee. Go, you  |     |
| FTLN 2142              | thing, go.   |     |
| FTLN 2143              | HOSTESS Say, what thing, what thing?   |     |
| FTLN 2144              | FALSTAFF What thing? Why, a thing to thank God on.   | 125 |
|                        |  |     |

| FTLN 2145 | HOSTESS I am no thing to thank God on, I would thou     |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 2146 | shouldst know it! I am an honest man's wife, and,       |     |
| FTLN 2147 | setting thy knighthood aside, thou art a knave to       |     |
| FTLN 2148 | call me so.   |     |
| FTLN 2149 | FALSTAFF Setting thy womanhood aside, thou art a        | 130 |
| FTLN 2150 | beast to say otherwise.                                 |     |
| FTLN 2151 | HOSTESS Say, what beast, thou knave, thou?              |     |
| FTLN 2152 | FALSTAFF What beast? Why, an otter.                     |     |
| FTLN 2153 | PRINCE An otter, Sir John. Why an otter?                |     |
| FTLN 2154 | FALSTAFF Why, she's neither fish nor flesh; a man       | 135 |
| FTLN 2155 | knows not where to have her.                            |     |
| FTLN 2156 | HOSTESS Thou art an unjust man in saying so. Thou or    |     |
| FTLN 2157 | any man knows where to have me, thou knave,             |     |
| FTLN 2158 | thou.   |     |
| FTLN 2159 | PRINCE Thou sayst true, hostess, and he slanders thee   | 140 |
| FTLN 2160 | most grossly.   |     |
| FTLN 2161 | HOSTESS So he doth you, my lord, and said this other    |     |
| FTLN 2162 | day you owed him a thousand pound.                      |     |
| FTLN 2163 | PRINCE Sirrah, do I owe you a thousand pound?           |     |
| FTLN 2164 | FALSTAFF A thousand pound, Hal? A million. Thy love is  | 145 |
| FTLN 2165 | worth a million; thou owest me thy love.                |     |
| FTLN 2166 | HOSTESS Nay, my lord, he called you "jack," and said    |     |
| FTLN 2167 | he would cudgel you.                                    |     |
| FTLN 2168 | FALSTAFF Did I, Bardolph?                               |     |
| FTLN 2169 | BARDOLPH Indeed, Sir John, you said so.                 | 150 |
| FTLN 2170 | FALSTAFF Yea, if he said my ring was copper.            |     |
| FTLN 2171 | PRINCE I say 'tis copper. Darest thou be as good as thy |     |
| FTLN 2172 | word now?   |     |
| FTLN 2173 | FALSTAFF Why, Hal, thou knowest, as thou art but        |     |
| FTLN 2174 | man, I dare, but as thou art prince, I fear thee as I   | 155 |
| FTLN 2175 | fear the roaring of the lion's whelp.                   |     |
| FTLN 2176 | PRINCE And why not as the lion?                         |     |
| FTLN 2177 | FALSTAFF The King himself is to be feared as the lion.  |     |
| FTLN 2178 | Dost thou think I'll fear thee as I fear thy father?    |     |
| FTLN 2179 | Nay, an I do, I pray God my girdle break.               | 160 |
| FTLN 2180 | PRINCE O, if it should, how would thy guts fall about   |     |
|           |   |     |

| FTLN 2181 | thy knees! But, sirrah, there's no room for faith,        |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 2182 | truth, nor honesty in this bosom of thine. It is all      |     |
| FTLN 2183 | filled up with guts and midriff. Charge an honest         |     |
| FTLN 2184 | woman with picking thy pocket? Why, thou whoreson,        | 165 |
| FTLN 2185 | impudent, embossed rascal, if there were                  |     |
| FTLN 2186 | anything in thy pocket but tavern reckonings,             |     |
| FTLN 2187 | memorandums of bawdy houses, and one poor                 |     |
| FTLN 2188 | pennyworth of sugar candy to make thee long-winded,       |     |
| FTLN 2189 | if thy pocket were enriched with any other                | 170 |
| FTLN 2190 | injuries but these, I am a villain. And yet you will      |     |
| FTLN 2191 | stand to it! You will not pocket up wrong! Art thou       |     |
| FTLN 2192 | not ashamed?  |     |
| FTLN 2193 | FALSTAFF Dost thou hear, Hal? Thou knowest in the         |     |
| FTLN 2194 | state of innocency Adam fell, and what should poor        | 175 |
| FTLN 2195 | Jack Falstaff do in the days of villainy? Thou seest I    |     |
| FTLN 2196 | have more flesh than another man and therefore            |     |
| FTLN 2197 | more frailty. You confess, then, you picked my            |     |
| FTLN 2198 | pocket.   |     |
| FTLN 2199 | PRINCE It appears so by the story.                        | 180 |
| FTLN 2200 | FALSTAFF Hostess, I forgive thee. Go make ready           |     |
| FTLN 2201 | breakfast, love thy husband, look to thy servants,        |     |
| FTLN 2202 | cherish thy guests. Thou shalt find me tractable          |     |
| FTLN 2203 | to any honest reason. Thou seest I am pacified still.     |     |
| FTLN 2204 | Nay, prithee, begone. (Hostess exits.) Now, Hal, to       | 185 |
| FTLN 2205 | the news at court. For the robbery, lad, how is that      |     |
| FTLN 2206 | answered?   |     |
| FTLN 2207 | PRINCE O, my sweet beef, I must still be good angel to    |     |
| FTLN 2208 | thee. The money is paid back again.                       |     |
| FTLN 2209 | FALSTAFF O, I do not like that paying back. 'Tis a double | 190 |
| FTLN 2210 | labor.  |     |
| FTLN 2211 | PRINCE I am good friends with my father and may do        |     |
| FTLN 2212 | anything.   |     |
| FTLN 2213 | FALSTAFF Rob me the Exchequer the first thing thou        |     |
| FTLN 2214 | dost, and do it with unwashed hands too.                  | 195 |
| FTLN 2215 | BARDOLPH Do, my lord.                                     |     |
| FTLN 2216 | PRINCE I have procured thee, Jack, a charge of foot.      |     |
|           |   |     |

| ACT | 2  | SC  | 2 |
|-----|----|-----|---|
| ACI | ٥. | SC. | J |

| ETI NI 2217 | FALSTAFF I would it had been of horse. Where shall I     |       |
|-------------|--|-------|
| FTLN 2217   |  |       |
| FTLN 2218   | find one that can steal well? O, for a fine thief of     | • • • |
| FTLN 2219   | the age of two-and-twenty or thereabouts! I am heinously | 200   |
| FTLN 2220   | unprovided. Well, God be thanked for these               |       |
| FTLN 2221   | rebels. They offend none but the virtuous. I laud        |       |
| FTLN 2222   | them; I praise them.                                     |       |
| FTLN 2223   | PRINCE Bardolph.   |       |
| FTLN 2224   | BARDOLPH My lord.  | 205   |
|             | PRINCE, <i>[handing Bardolph papers]</i>                 |       |
| FTLN 2225   | Go, bear this letter to Lord John of Lancaster,          |       |
| FTLN 2226   | To my brother John; this to my Lord of                   |       |
| FTLN 2227   | Westmoreland.  |       |
| FTLN 2228   | Go, Peto, to horse, to horse, for thou and I             |       |
| FTLN 2229   | Have thirty miles to ride yet ere dinner time.           | 210   |
|             | 「Peto exits. ]   |       |
| FTLN 2230   | Jack, meet me tomorrow in the Temple hall                |       |
| FTLN 2231   | At two o'clock in the afternoon;                         |       |
| FTLN 2232   | There shalt thou know thy charge, and there receive      |       |
| FTLN 2233   | Money and order for their furniture.                     |       |
| FTLN 2234   | The land is burning. Percy stands on high,               | 215   |
| FTLN 2235   | And either we or they must lower lie.   The exits.       |       |
|             | FALSTAFF   |       |
| FTLN 2236   | Rare words, brave world!—Hostess, my breakfast,          |       |
| FTLN 2237   | come.—   |       |
| FTLN 2238   | O, I could wish this tavern were my drum.                |       |
|             | THe exits.   |       |
|             |  |       |

## 「*ACT 4* ¬

# Scene 1 Finter Hotspur, Worcester, and Douglas.

|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2239 | Well said, my noble Scot. If speaking truth         |    |
| FTLN 2240 | In this fine age were not thought flattery,         |    |
| FTLN 2241 | Such attribution should the Douglas have            |    |
| FTLN 2242 | As not a soldier of this season's stamp             |    |
| FTLN 2243 | Should go so general current through the world.     | 5  |
| FTLN 2244 | By God, I cannot flatter. I do defy                 |    |
| FTLN 2245 | The tongues of soothers. But a braver place         |    |
| FTLN 2246 | In my heart's love hath no man than yourself.       |    |
| FTLN 2247 | Nay, task me to my word; approve me, lord.          |    |
| FTLN 2248 | DOUGLAS Thou art the king of honor.                 | 10 |
| FTLN 2249 | No man so potent breathes upon the ground           |    |
| FTLN 2250 | But I will beard him.                               |    |
| FTLN 2251 | HOTSPUR Do so, and 'tis well.                       |    |
|           | Enter [a Messenger] with letters.                   |    |
| FTLN 2252 | What letters hast thou there? To Douglas. I can but |    |
| FTLN 2253 | thank you.  | 15 |
| FTLN 2254 | MESSENGER These letters come from your father.      |    |
|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
| FTLN 2255 | Letters from him! Why comes he not himself?         |    |
|           | MESSENGER   |    |
| FTLN 2256 | He cannot come, my lord. He is grievous sick.       |    |
|           | 157   |    |

|              | HOTSPUR   |     |
|--------------|---|-----|
| FTLN 2257    | Zounds, how has he the leisure to be sick   |     |
| FTLN 2258    | In such a justling time? Who leads his power?   | 20  |
| FTLN 2259    | Under whose government come they along?   |     |
|              | MESSENGER, \( \begin{aligned} \text{handing letter to Hotspur, who begins} \end{aligned} \) |     |
|              | reading it  |     |
| FTLN 2260    | His letters bears his mind, not I, my \[ \text{lord.} \]                                    |     |
|              | WORCESTER   |     |
| FTLN 2261    | I prithee, tell me, doth he keep his bed?   |     |
|              | MESSENGER   |     |
| FTLN 2262    | He did, my lord, four days ere I set forth,   |     |
| FTLN 2263    | And, at the time of my departure thence,  | 25  |
| FTLN 2264    | He was much feared by his physicians.   |     |
|              | WORCESTER   |     |
| FTLN 2265    | I would the state of time had first been whole  |     |
| FTLN 2266    | Ere he by sickness had been visited.  |     |
| FTLN 2267    | His health was never better worth than now.   |     |
|              | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 2268    | Sick now? Droop now? This sickness doth infect  | 30  |
| FTLN 2269    | The very lifeblood of our enterprise.   |     |
| FTLN 2270    | 'Tis catching hither, even to our camp.   |     |
| FTLN 2271    | He writes me here that inward sickness—   |     |
| FTLN 2272    | And that his friends by deputation  | 2.5 |
| FTLN 2273    | Could not so soon be drawn, nor did he think it   | 35  |
| FTLN 2274    | meet  |     |
| FTLN 2275    | To lay so dangerous and dear a trust  |     |
| FTLN 2276    | On any soul removed but on his own;   |     |
| FTLN 2277    | Yet doth he give us bold advertisement  | 40  |
| FTLN 2278    | That with our small conjunction we should on  | 40  |
| FTLN 2279    | To see how fortune is disposed to us,   |     |
| FTLN 2280    | For, as he writes, there is no quailing now,  |     |
| FTLN 2281    | Because the King is certainly possessed   |     |
| FTLN 2282    | Of all our purposes. What say you to it? WORCESTER  |     |
| FTLN 2283    | Your father's sickness is a maim to us.   | 45  |
| 1 1 LIN 4403 | 1 our famer 5 siekness is a mann w us.  | 43  |

|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 2284 | A perilous gash, a very limb lopped off!         |    |
| FTLN 2285 | And yet, in faith, it is not. His present want   |    |
| FTLN 2286 | Seems more than we shall find it. Were it good   |    |
| FTLN 2287 | To set the exact wealth of all our states        |    |
| FTLN 2288 | All at one cast? To set so rich a main           | 50 |
| FTLN 2289 | On the nice hazard of one doubtful hour?         |    |
| FTLN 2290 | It were not good, for therein should we read     |    |
| FTLN 2291 | The very bottom and the soul of hope,            |    |
| FTLN 2292 | The very list, the very utmost bound             |    |
| FTLN 2293 | Of all our fortunes.                             | 55 |
|           | DOUGLAS  |    |
| FTLN 2294 | Faith, and so we should, where now remains       |    |
| FTLN 2295 | A sweet reversion. We may boldly spend           |    |
| FTLN 2296 | Upon the hope of what ris to come in.            |    |
| FTLN 2297 | A comfort of retirement lives in this.           |    |
|           | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 2298 | A rendezvous, a home to fly unto,                | 60 |
| FTLN 2299 | If that the devil and mischance look big         |    |
| FTLN 2300 | Upon the maidenhead of our affairs.              |    |
|           | WORCESTER  |    |
| FTLN 2301 | But yet I would your father had been here.       |    |
| FTLN 2302 | The quality and hair of our attempt              |    |
| FTLN 2303 | Brooks no division. It will be thought           | 65 |
| FTLN 2304 | By some that know not why he is away             |    |
| FTLN 2305 | That wisdom, loyalty, and mere dislike           |    |
| FTLN 2306 | Of our proceedings kept the Earl from hence.     |    |
| FTLN 2307 | And think how such an apprehension               |    |
| FTLN 2308 | May turn the tide of fearful faction             | 70 |
| FTLN 2309 | And breed a kind of question in our cause.       |    |
| FTLN 2310 | For well you know, we of the off'ring side       |    |
| FTLN 2311 | Must keep aloof from strict arbitrament,         |    |
| FTLN 2312 | And stop all sight-holes, every loop from whence |    |
| FTLN 2313 | The eye of reason may pry in upon us.            | 75 |
| FTLN 2314 | This absence of your father's draws a curtain    |    |

| ACT | 4. | SC. | 1 |
|-----|----|-----|---|
|     |    |     |   |

| FTLN 2315 | That shows the ignorant a kind of fear           |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 2316 | Before not dreamt of.                            |     |
| FTLN 2317 | HOTSPUR You strain too far.                      |     |
| FTLN 2318 | I rather of his absence make this use:           | 80  |
| FTLN 2319 | It lends a luster and more great opinion,        |     |
| FTLN 2320 | A larger dare, to our great enterprise           |     |
| FTLN 2321 | Than if the Earl were here, for men must think   |     |
| FTLN 2322 | If we without his help can make a head           |     |
| FTLN 2323 | To push against a kingdom, with his help         | 85  |
| FTLN 2324 | We shall o'erturn it topsy-turvy down.           |     |
| FTLN 2325 | Yet all goes well; yet all our joints are whole. |     |
|           | DOUGLAS  |     |
| FTLN 2326 | As heart can think. There is not such a word     |     |
| FTLN 2327 | Spoke of in Scotland as this term of fear.       |     |
|           |  |     |
|           | Enter Sir Richard Vernon.                        |     |
|           |  |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 2328 | My cousin Vernon, welcome, by my soul.           | 90  |
|           | VERNON   |     |
| FTLN 2329 | Pray God my news be worth a welcome, lord.       |     |
| FTLN 2330 | The Earl of Westmoreland, seven thousand strong, |     |
| FTLN 2331 | Is marching hitherwards, with him Prince John.   |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 2332 | No harm, what more?                              |     |
| FTLN 2333 | VERNON And further I have learned                | 95  |
| FTLN 2334 | The King himself in person is set forth,         |     |
| FTLN 2335 | Or hitherwards intended speedily,                |     |
| FTLN 2336 | With strong and mighty preparation.              |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 2337 | He shall be welcome too. Where is his son,       |     |
| FTLN 2338 | The nimble-footed madcap Prince of Wales,        | 100 |
| FTLN 2339 | And his comrades, that daffed the world aside    |     |
| FTLN 2340 | And bid it pass?                                 |     |
| FTLN 2341 | VERNON All furnished, all in arms,               |     |
| FTLN 2342 | All plumed like estridges that with the wind     |     |
| FTLN 2343 | Bated like eagles having lately bathed,          | 105 |
|           |  |     |
| J         |  |     |

| FTLN 2344 | Glittering in golden coats like images,                   |     |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 2345 | As full of spirit as the month of May,                    |     |
| FTLN 2346 | And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer,                     |     |
| FTLN 2347 | Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.            |     |
| FTLN 2348 | I saw young Harry with his beaver on,                     | 110 |
| FTLN 2349 | His cuisses on his thighs, gallantly armed,               |     |
| FTLN 2350 | Rise from the ground like feathered Mercury               |     |
| FTLN 2351 | And vaulted with such ease into his seat                  |     |
| FTLN 2352 | As if an angel [dropped] down from the clouds,            |     |
| FTLN 2353 | To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus                          | 115 |
| FTLN 2354 | And witch the world with noble horsemanship.              |     |
|           | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 2355 | No more, no more! Worse than the sun in March             |     |
| FTLN 2356 | This praise doth nourish agues. Let them come.            |     |
| FTLN 2357 | They come like sacrifices in their trim,                  |     |
| FTLN 2358 | And to the fire-eyed maid of smoky war                    | 120 |
| FTLN 2359 | All hot and bleeding will we offer them.                  |     |
| FTLN 2360 | The mailed Mars shall on his [altar] sit                  |     |
| FTLN 2361 | Up to the ears in blood. I am on fire                     |     |
| FTLN 2362 | To hear this rich reprisal is so nigh                     |     |
| FTLN 2363 | And yet not ours. Come, let me taste my horse,            | 125 |
| FTLN 2364 | Who is to bear me like a thunderbolt                      |     |
| FTLN 2365 | Against the bosom of the Prince of Wales.                 |     |
| FTLN 2366 | Harry to Harry shall, hot horse to horse,                 |     |
| FTLN 2367 | Meet and ne'er part till one drop down a corse.           |     |
| FTLN 2368 | O, that Glendower were come!                              | 130 |
| FTLN 2369 | VERNON There is more news.                                |     |
| FTLN 2370 | I learned in Worcester, as I rode along,                  |     |
| FTLN 2371 | He cannot draw his power this fourteen days.              |     |
|           | DOUGLAS   |     |
| FTLN 2372 | That's the worst tidings that I hear of \( \text{yet.} \) |     |
|           | WORCESTER   |     |
| FTLN 2373 | Ay, by my faith, that bears a frosty sound.               | 135 |
|           | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 2374 | What may the King's whole battle reach unto?              |     |
|           |   |     |

140

|           | VERNON   |
|-----------|--|
| FTLN 2375 | To thirty thousand.                              |
| FTLN 2376 | HOTSPUR Forty let it be.                         |
| FTLN 2377 | My father and Glendower being both away,         |
| FTLN 2378 | The powers of us may serve so great a day.       |
| FTLN 2379 | Come, let us take a muster speedily.             |
| FTLN 2380 | Doomsday is near. Die all, die merrily.          |
|           | DOUGLAS  |
| FTLN 2381 | Talk not of dying. I am out of fear              |
| FTLN 2382 | Of death or death's hand for this one half year. |

They exit.

# Scene 2 Enter Falstaff and Bardolph.

| FTLN 2383 | FALSTAFF Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry. Fill       |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 2384 | me a bottle of sack. Our soldiers shall march              |    |
| FTLN 2385 | through. We'll to Sutton [Coldfield] tonight.              |    |
| FTLN 2386 | BARDOLPH Will you give me money, captain?                  |    |
| FTLN 2387 | FALSTAFF Lay out, lay out.                                 | 5  |
| FTLN 2388 | BARDOLPH This bottle makes an angel.                       |    |
| FTLN 2389 | FALSTAFF An if it do, take it for thy labor. An if it make |    |
| FTLN 2390 | twenty, take them all. I'll answer the coinage. Bid        |    |
| FTLN 2391 | my lieutenant Peto meet me at town's end.                  |    |
| FTLN 2392 | BARDOLPH I will, captain. Farewell. He exits.              | 10 |
| FTLN 2393 | FALSTAFF If I be not ashamed of my soldiers, I am a        |    |
| FTLN 2394 | soused gurnet. I have misused the King's press             |    |
| FTLN 2395 | damnably. I have got, in exchange of a hundred             |    |
| FTLN 2396 | and fifty soldiers, three hundred and odd pounds. I        |    |
| FTLN 2397 | press me none but good householders, "yeomen's"            | 15 |
| FTLN 2398 | sons, inquire me out contracted bachelors, such as         |    |
| FTLN 2399 | had been asked twice on the banns—such a commodity         |    |
| FTLN 2400 | of warm slaves as had as Tlief hear the devil              |    |
|           |  |    |
| FTLN 2401 | as a drum, such as fear the report of a caliver worse      |    |

| FTLN 2402 | than a struck fowl or a hurt wild duck. I pressed me    | 20  |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 2403 | none but such toasts-and-butter, with hearts in their   |     |
| FTLN 2404 | bellies no bigger than pins' heads, and they have       |     |
| FTLN 2405 | bought out their services, and now my whole             |     |
| FTLN 2406 | charge consists of ancients, corporals, lieutenants,    |     |
| FTLN 2407 | gentlemen of companies—slaves as ragged as Lazarus      | 25  |
| FTLN 2408 | in the painted cloth, where the glutton's dogs          |     |
| FTLN 2409 | licked his sores; and such as indeed were never         |     |
| FTLN 2410 | soldiers, but discarded, unjust servingmen, younger     |     |
| FTLN 2411 | sons to younger brothers, revolted tapsters, and        |     |
| FTLN 2412 | ostlers tradefallen, the cankers of a calm world and    | 30  |
| FTLN 2413 | a long peace, ten times more dishonorable-ragged        |     |
| FTLN 2414 | than an old feazed ancient; and such have I to fill up  |     |
| FTLN 2415 | the rooms of them as have bought out their services,    |     |
| FTLN 2416 | that you would think that I had a hundred and fifty     |     |
| FTLN 2417 | tattered prodigals lately come from swine-keeping,      | 35  |
| FTLN 2418 | from eating draff and husks. A mad fellow met me        |     |
| FTLN 2419 | on the way and told me I had unloaded all the           |     |
| FTLN 2420 | gibbets and pressed the dead bodies. No eye hath        |     |
| FTLN 2421 | seen such scarecrows. I'll not march through Coventry   |     |
| FTLN 2422 | with them, that's flat. Nay, and the villains           | 40  |
| FTLN 2423 | march wide betwixt the legs as if they had gyves on,    |     |
| FTLN 2424 | for indeed I had the most of them out of prison.        |     |
| FTLN 2425 | There's not a shirt and a half in all my company,       |     |
| FTLN 2426 | and the half shirt is two napkins tacked together       |     |
| FTLN 2427 | and thrown over the shoulders like a herald's coat      | 45  |
| FTLN 2428 | without sleeves; and the shirt, to say the truth,       |     |
| FTLN 2429 | stolen from my host at Saint Albans or the red-nose     |     |
| FTLN 2430 | innkeeper of Daventry. But that's all one; they'll find |     |
| FTLN 2431 | linen enough on every hedge.                            |     |
|           |   |     |
|           | Enter the Prince [and the] Lord of Westmoreland.        |     |
| FTLN 2432 | PRINCE How now, blown Jack? How now, quilt?             | 50  |
| FTLN 2433 | FALSTAFF What, Hal, how now, mad wag? What a devil      | 2.0 |
| FTLN 2434 | dost thou in Warwickshire?—My good Lord of              |     |
|           |   |     |

| FTLN 2435 | Westmoreland, I cry you mercy. I thought your             |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2436 | Honor had already been at Shrewsbury.                     |    |
| FTLN 2437 | WESTMORELAND Faith, Sir John, 'tis more than time         | 55 |
| FTLN 2438 | that I were there and you too, but my powers are          |    |
| FTLN 2439 | there already. The King, I can tell you, looks for us     |    |
| FTLN 2440 | all. We must away all night.                              |    |
| FTLN 2441 | FALSTAFF Tut, never fear me. I am as vigilant as a cat to |    |
| FTLN 2442 | steal cream.  | 60 |
| FTLN 2443 | PRINCE I think to steal cream indeed, for thy theft hath  |    |
| FTLN 2444 | already made thee butter. But tell me, Jack, whose        |    |
| FTLN 2445 | fellows are these that come after?                        |    |
| FTLN 2446 | FALSTAFF Mine, Hal, mine.                                 |    |
| FTLN 2447 | PRINCE I did never see such pitiful rascals.              | 65 |
| FTLN 2448 | FALSTAFF Tut, tut, good enough to toss; food for powder,  |    |
| FTLN 2449 | food for powder. They'll fill a pit as well as            |    |
| FTLN 2450 | better. Tush, man, mortal men, mortal men.                |    |
| FTLN 2451 | WESTMORELAND Ay, but, Sir John, methinks they are         |    |
| FTLN 2452 | exceeding poor and bare, too beggarly.                    | 70 |
| FTLN 2453 | FALSTAFF Faith, for their poverty, I know not where       |    |
| FTLN 2454 | they had that, and for their bareness, I am sure they     |    |
| FTLN 2455 | never learned that of me.                                 |    |
| FTLN 2456 | PRINCE No, I'll be sworn, unless you call three fingers   |    |
| FTLN 2457 | in the ribs bare. But, sirrah, make haste. Percy is       | 75 |
| FTLN 2458 | already in the field. He exits.                           |    |
| FTLN 2459 | FALSTAFF What, is the King encamped?                      |    |
| FTLN 2460 | WESTMORELAND He is, Sir John. I fear we shall stay too    |    |
| FTLN 2461 | long. The exits.  |    |
| FTLN 2462 | FALSTAFF Well,  | 80 |
| FTLN 2463 | To the latter end of a fray and the beginning of a        |    |
| FTLN 2464 | feast   |    |
| FTLN 2465 | Fits a dull fighter and a keen guest.                     |    |
|           | THe exits.  |    |
|           |   |    |

# Scene 3 Enter Hotspur, Worcester, Douglas, 「and Vernon.

|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2466 | We'll fight with him tonight.                     |    |
| FTLN 2467 | WORCESTER It may not be.                          |    |
|           | DOUGLAS   |    |
| FTLN 2468 | You give him then advantage.                      |    |
| FTLN 2469 | VERNON Not a whit.                                |    |
|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
| FTLN 2470 | Why say you so? Looks he not for supply?          | 5  |
| FTLN 2471 | VERNON So do we.                                  |    |
| FTLN 2472 | HOTSPUR His is certain; ours is doubtful.         |    |
|           | WORCESTER   |    |
| FTLN 2473 | Good cousin, be advised. Stir not tonight.        |    |
|           | VERNON, [to Hotspur]                              |    |
| FTLN 2474 | Do not, my lord.                                  |    |
| FTLN 2475 | DOUGLAS You do not counsel well.                  | 10 |
| FTLN 2476 | You speak it out of fear and cold heart.          |    |
|           | VERNON  |    |
| FTLN 2477 | Do me no slander, Douglas. By my life             |    |
| FTLN 2478 | (And I dare well maintain it with my life),       |    |
| FTLN 2479 | If well-respected honor bid me on,                |    |
| FTLN 2480 | I hold as little counsel with weak fear           | 15 |
| FTLN 2481 | As you, my lord, or any Scot that this day lives. |    |
| FTLN 2482 | Let it be seen tomorrow in the battle             |    |
| FTLN 2483 | Which of us fears.                                |    |
| FTLN 2484 | DOUGLAS Yea, or tonight.                          |    |
| FTLN 2485 | VERNON Content.                                   | 20 |
| FTLN 2486 | HOTSPUR Tonight, say I.                           |    |
|           | VERNON  |    |
| FTLN 2487 | Come, come, it may not be. I wonder much,         |    |
| FTLN 2488 | Being men of such great leading as you are,       |    |
| FTLN 2489 | That you foresee not what impediments             |    |
| FTLN 2490 | Drag back our expedition. Certain horse           | 25 |
| FTLN 2491 | Of my cousin Vernon's are not yet come up.        |    |

| ACT | 4. | SC. | 3 |
|-----|----|-----|---|
|     |    |     |   |

| FTLN 2492 | Your uncle Worcester's horse came but today,     |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 2493 | And now their pride and mettle is asleep,        |     |
| FTLN 2494 | Their courage with hard labor tame and dull,     |     |
| FTLN 2495 | That not a horse is half the half of himself.    | 30  |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 2496 | So are the horses of the enemy                   |     |
| FTLN 2497 | In general journey-bated and brought low.        |     |
| FTLN 2498 | The better part of ours are full of rest.        |     |
|           | WORCESTER  |     |
| FTLN 2499 | The number of the King exceedeth ours.           |     |
| FTLN 2500 | For God's sake, cousin, stay till all come in.   | 35  |
|           | The trumpet sounds a parley.                     |     |
|           |  |     |
|           | Enter Sir Walter Blunt.                          |     |
|           |  |     |
|           | BLUNT  |     |
| FTLN 2501 | I come with gracious offers from the King,       |     |
| FTLN 2502 | If you vouchsafe me hearing and respect.         |     |
|           | HOTSPUR  |     |
| FTLN 2503 | Welcome, Sir Walter Blunt, and would to God      |     |
| FTLN 2504 | You were of our determination.                   |     |
| FTLN 2505 | Some of us love you well, and even those some    | 40  |
| FTLN 2506 | Envy your great deservings and good name         |     |
| FTLN 2507 | Because you are not of our quality               |     |
| FTLN 2508 | But stand against us like an enemy.              |     |
|           | BLUNT  |     |
| FTLN 2509 | And God defend but still I should stand so,      | 4.5 |
| FTLN 2510 | So long as out of limit and true rule            | 45  |
| FTLN 2511 | You stand against anointed majesty.              |     |
| FTLN 2512 | But to my charge. The King hath sent to know     |     |
| FTLN 2514 | The nature of your griefs, and whereupon         |     |
| FTLN 2514 | You conjure from the breast of civil peace       | 50  |
| FTLN 2515 | Such bold hostility, teaching his duteous land   | 50  |
| FTLN 2516 | Audacious cruelty. If that the King              |     |
| FTLN 2517 | Have any way your good deserts forgot,           |     |
| FTLN 2518 | Which he confesseth to be manifold,              |     |
| FTLN 2519 | He bids you name your griefs, and with all speed |     |
|           |  |     |

| ACT | 4. | SC. | 3 |
|-----|----|-----|---|
|     |    |     |   |

| FTLN 2520 | You shall have your desires with interest         | 55 |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2521 | And pardon absolute for yourself and these        |    |
| FTLN 2522 | Herein misled by your suggestion.                 |    |
|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
| FTLN 2523 | The King is kind, and well we know the King       |    |
| FTLN 2524 | Knows at what time to promise, when to pay.       |    |
| FTLN 2525 | My father and my uncle and myself                 | 60 |
| FTLN 2526 | Did give him that same royalty he wears,          |    |
| FTLN 2527 | And when he was not six-and-twenty strong,        |    |
| FTLN 2528 | Sick in the world's regard, wretched and low,     |    |
| FTLN 2529 | A poor unminded outlaw sneaking home,             |    |
| FTLN 2530 | My father gave him welcome to the shore;          | 65 |
| FTLN 2531 | And when he heard him swear and vow to God        |    |
| FTLN 2532 | He came but to be Duke of Lancaster,              |    |
| FTLN 2533 | To sue his livery, and beg his peace              |    |
| FTLN 2534 | With tears of innocency and terms of zeal,        |    |
| FTLN 2535 | My father, in kind heart and pity moved,          | 70 |
| FTLN 2536 | Swore him assistance and performed it too.        |    |
| FTLN 2537 | Now when the lords and barons of the realm        |    |
| FTLN 2538 | Perceived Northumberland did lean to him,         |    |
| FTLN 2539 | The more and less came in with cap and knee,      |    |
| FTLN 2540 | Met him in boroughs, cities, villages,            | 75 |
| FTLN 2541 | Attended him on bridges, stood in lanes,          |    |
| FTLN 2542 | Laid gifts before him, proffered him their oaths, |    |
| FTLN 2543 | Gave him their heirs as pages, followed him       |    |
| FTLN 2544 | Even at the heels in golden multitudes.           |    |
| FTLN 2545 | He presently, as greatness knows itself,          | 80 |
| FTLN 2546 | Steps me a little higher than his vow             |    |
| FTLN 2547 | Made to my father while his blood was poor        |    |
| FTLN 2548 | Upon the naked shore at Ravenspurgh,              |    |
| FTLN 2549 | And now forsooth takes on him to reform           |    |
| FTLN 2550 | Some certain edicts and some strait decrees       | 85 |
| FTLN 2551 | That lie too heavy on the commonwealth,           |    |
| FTLN 2552 | Cries out upon abuses, seems to weep              |    |
| FTLN 2553 | Over his country's wrongs, and by this face,      |    |
| FTLN 2554 | This seeming brow of justice, did he win          |    |
| FTLN 2555 | The hearts of all that he did angle for,          | 90 |
|           |   |    |

| FTLN 2556  | Proceeded further—cut me off the heads            |     |
|------------|---|-----|
| FTLN 2557  | Of all the favorites that the absent king         |     |
| FTLN 2558  | In deputation left behind him here                |     |
| FTLN 2559  | When he was personal in the Irish war.            |     |
| 1 1LN 2337 | BLUNT   |     |
| FTLN 2560  | Tut, I came not to hear this.                     | 95  |
| FTLN 2561  | HOTSPUR Then to the point.                        | 75  |
| FTLN 2562  | In short time after, he deposed the King,         |     |
| FTLN 2563  | Soon after that deprived him of his life          |     |
| FTLN 2564  | And, in the neck of that, tasked the whole state. |     |
| FTLN 2565  | To make that worse, suffered his kinsman March    | 100 |
| FTLN 2566  | (Who is, if every owner were well placed,         | 100 |
| FTLN 2567  | Indeed his king) to be engaged in Wales,          |     |
| FTLN 2568  | There without ransom to lie forfeited,            |     |
| FTLN 2569  | Disgraced me in my happy victories,               |     |
| FTLN 2570  | Sought to entrap me by intelligence,              | 105 |
| FTLN 2571  | Rated mine uncle from the council board,          |     |
| FTLN 2572  | In rage dismissed my father from the court,       |     |
| FTLN 2573  | Broke oath on oath, committed wrong on wrong,     |     |
| FTLN 2574  | And in conclusion drove us to seek out            |     |
| FTLN 2575  | This head of safety, and withal to pry            | 110 |
| FTLN 2576  | Into his title, the which we find                 |     |
| FTLN 2577  | Too indirect for long continuance.                |     |
|            | BLUNT   |     |
| FTLN 2578  | Shall I return this answer to the King?           |     |
|            | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 2579  | Not so, Sir Walter. We'll withdraw awhile.        |     |
| FTLN 2580  | Go to the King, and let there be impawned         | 115 |
| FTLN 2581  | Some surety for a safe return again,              |     |
| FTLN 2582  | And in the morning early shall mine uncle         |     |
| FTLN 2583  | Bring him our purposes. And so farewell.          |     |
|            | BLUNT   |     |
| FTLN 2584  | I would you would accept of grace and love.       |     |
|            | HOTSPUR   |     |
| FTLN 2585  | And maybe so we shall.                            | 120 |
| FTLN 2586  | BLUNT Pray God you do.                            |     |
|            | They exit.  |     |

# Scene 4 Enter Archbishop of York and Sir Michael.

|           | ARCHBISHOP, <i>[handing papers]</i>             |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2587 | Hie, good Sir Michael, bear this sealed brief   |    |
| FTLN 2588 | With wingèd haste to the Lord Marshal,          |    |
| FTLN 2589 | This to my cousin Scroop, and all the rest      |    |
| FTLN 2590 | To whom they are directed. If you knew          |    |
| FTLN 2591 | How much they do import, you would make haste.  | 5  |
|           | SIR MICHAEL                                     |    |
| FTLN 2592 | My good lord, I guess their tenor.              |    |
| FTLN 2593 | ARCHBISHOP Like enough you do.                  |    |
| FTLN 2594 | Tomorrow, good Sir Michael, is a day            |    |
| FTLN 2595 | Wherein the fortune of ten thousand men         |    |
| FTLN 2596 | Must bide the touch. For, sir, at Shrewsbury,   | 10 |
| FTLN 2597 | As I am truly given to understand,              |    |
| FTLN 2598 | The King with mighty and quick-raised power     |    |
| FTLN 2599 | Meets with Lord Harry. And I fear, Sir Michael, |    |
| FTLN 2600 | What with the sickness of Northumberland,       |    |
| FTLN 2601 | Whose power was in the first proportion,        | 15 |
| FTLN 2602 | And what with Owen Glendower's absence thence,  |    |
| FTLN 2603 | Who with them was a rated sinew too             |    |
| FTLN 2604 | And comes not in, o'erruled by prophecies,      |    |
| FTLN 2605 | I fear the power of Percy is too weak           |    |
| FTLN 2606 | To wage an instant trial with the King.         | 20 |
|           | SIR MICHAEL                                     |    |
| FTLN 2607 | Why, my good lord, you need not fear.           |    |
| FTLN 2608 | There is Douglas and Lord Mortimer.             |    |
| FTLN 2609 | ARCHBISHOP No, Mortimer is not there.           |    |
|           | SIR MICHAEL                                     |    |
| FTLN 2610 | But there is Mordake, Vernon, Lord Harry Percy, |    |
| FTLN 2611 | And there is my Lord of Worcester, and a head   | 25 |
| FTLN 2612 | Of gallant warriors, noble gentlemen.           |    |
|           | ARCHBISHOP                                      |    |
| FTLN 2613 | And so there is. But yet the King hath drawn    |    |
| FTLN 2614 | The special head of all the land together:      |    |
|           |   |    |

## 183 Henry IV, Part I

| The Prince of Wales, Lord John of Lancaster,    |  |
|---|--|
| The noble Westmoreland, and warlike Blunt,      | 30   |
| And many more corrivals and dear men            |  |
| Of estimation and command in arms.              |  |
| SIR MICHAEL                                     |  |
| Doubt not, my lord, they shall be well opposed. |  |
| ARCHBISHOP                                      |  |
| I hope no less, yet needful 'tis to fear;       |  |
| And to prevent the worst, Sir Michael, speed.   | 35   |
| For if Lord Percy thrive not, ere the King      |  |
| Dismiss his power he means to visit us,         |  |
| For he hath heard of our confederacy,           |  |
| And 'tis but wisdom to make strong against him. |  |
| Therefore make haste. I must go write again     | 40   |
| To other friends. And so farewell, Sir Michael. |  |
| They exit.                                      |  |
|   | The noble Westmoreland, and warlike Blunt, And many more corrivals and dear men Of estimation and command in arms.  SIR MICHAEL  Doubt not, my lord, they shall be well opposed.  ARCHBISHOP  I hope no less, yet needful 'tis to fear; And to prevent the worst, Sir Michael, speed.  For if Lord Percy thrive not, ere the King Dismiss his power he means to visit us, For he hath heard of our confederacy, And 'tis but wisdom to make strong against him.  Therefore make haste. I must go write again To other friends. And so farewell, Sir Michael. |

## 「*ACT 5*¬

# Scene 1 Enter the King, Prince of Wales, Lord John of Lancaster, Sir Walter Blunt, 「and Falstaff.

|                        | KING  |    |
|------------------------|---|----|
| FTLN 2628              | How bloodily the sun begins to peer   |    |
| FTLN 2629              | Above yon bulky hill. The day looks pale  |    |
| FTLN 2630              | At his distemp'rature.  |    |
| FTLN 2631              | PRINCE The southern wind  |    |
| FTLN 2632              | Doth play the trumpet to his purposes,  | 5  |
| FTLN 2633              | And by his hollow whistling in the leaves   |    |
| FTLN 2634              | Foretells a tempest and a blust'ring day.   |    |
|                        | KING  |    |
| FTLN 2635              | Then with the losers let it sympathize,   |    |
| FTLN 2636              | For nothing can seem foul to those that win.  |    |
|                        | The trumpet sounds.   |    |
|                        | Enter Worcester [and Vernon.]   |    |
|                        |   |    |
| FTLN 2637              | How now, my Lord of Worcester? 'Tis not well  | 10 |
| FTLN 2638              | That you and I should meet upon such terms  |    |
| FTLN 2639              | As now we meet. You have deceived our trust   |    |
|                        | TIS HOW WE INCOME TOU HAVE GOODIVED OUT TRUST   |    |
| FTLN 2640              | And made us doff our easy robes of peace  |    |
| FTLN 2640<br>FTLN 2641 |   |    |
|                        | And made us doff our easy robes of peace  | 15 |
| FTLN 2641              | And made us doff our easy robes of peace To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel.  | 15 |
| FTLN 2641<br>FTLN 2642 | And made us doff our easy robes of peace To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel. This is not well, my lord; this is not well. | 15 |

| FTLN 2645 | And move in that obedient orb again                 |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2646 | Where you did give a fair and natural light,        |    |
| FTLN 2647 | And be no more an exhaled meteor,                   | 20 |
| FTLN 2648 | A prodigy of fear, and a portent                    |    |
| FTLN 2649 | Of broachèd mischief to the unborn times?           |    |
| FTLN 2650 | WORCESTER Hear me, my liege:                        |    |
| FTLN 2651 | For mine own part I could be well content           |    |
| FTLN 2652 | To entertain the lag end of my life                 | 25 |
| FTLN 2653 | With quiet hours. For I protest                     |    |
| FTLN 2654 | I have not sought the day of this dislike.          |    |
|           | KING  |    |
| FTLN 2655 | You have not sought it. How comes it then?          |    |
| FTLN 2656 | FALSTAFF Rebellion lay in his way, and he found it. |    |
| FTLN 2657 | PRINCE Peace, chewet, peace.                        | 30 |
|           | WORCESTER   |    |
| FTLN 2658 | It pleased your Majesty to turn your looks          |    |
| FTLN 2659 | Of favor from myself and all our house;             |    |
| FTLN 2660 | And yet I must remember you, my lord,               |    |
| FTLN 2661 | We were the first and dearest of your friends.      |    |
| FTLN 2662 | For you my staff of office did I break              | 35 |
| FTLN 2663 | In Richard's time, and posted day and night         |    |
| FTLN 2664 | To meet you on the way and kiss your hand           |    |
| FTLN 2665 | When yet you were in place and in account           |    |
| FTLN 2666 | Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.               |    |
| FTLN 2667 | It was myself, my brother, and his son              | 40 |
| FTLN 2668 | That brought you home and boldly did outdare        |    |
| FTLN 2669 | The dangers of the time. You swore to us,           |    |
| FTLN 2670 | And you did swear that oath at Doncaster,           |    |
| FTLN 2671 | That you did nothing purpose 'gainst the state,     |    |
| FTLN 2672 | Nor claim no further than your new-fall'n right,    | 45 |
| FTLN 2673 | The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster.            |    |
| FTLN 2674 | To this we swore our aid. But in short space        |    |
| FTLN 2675 | It rained down fortune show'ring on your head,      |    |
| FTLN 2676 | And such a flood of greatness fell on you—          |    |
| FTLN 2677 | What with our help, what with the absent king,      | 50 |
| FTLN 2678 | What with the injuries of a wanton time,            |    |
|           | 1   |    |

| FTLN 2679 | The seeming sufferances that you had borne,       |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2680 | And the contrarious winds that held the King      |    |
| FTLN 2681 | So long in his unlucky Irish wars                 |    |
| FTLN 2682 | That all in England did repute him dead—          | 55 |
| FTLN 2683 | And from this swarm of fair advantages            |    |
| FTLN 2684 | You took occasion to be quickly wooed             |    |
| FTLN 2685 | To gripe the general sway into your hand,         |    |
| FTLN 2686 | Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster;              |    |
| FTLN 2687 | And being fed by us, you used us so               | 60 |
| FTLN 2688 | As that ungentle gull, the cuckoo's bird,         |    |
| FTLN 2689 | Useth the sparrow—did oppress our nest,           |    |
| FTLN 2690 | Grew by our feeding to so great a bulk            |    |
| FTLN 2691 | That even our love durst not come near your sight |    |
| FTLN 2692 | For fear of swallowing; but with nimble wing      | 65 |
| FTLN 2693 | We were enforced for safety sake to fly           |    |
| FTLN 2694 | Out of your sight and raise this present head,    |    |
| FTLN 2695 | Whereby we stand opposèd by such means            |    |
| FTLN 2696 | As you yourself have forged against yourself      |    |
| FTLN 2697 | By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,           | 70 |
| FTLN 2698 | And violation of all faith and troth              |    |
| FTLN 2699 | Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.           |    |
|           | KING  |    |
| FTLN 2700 | These things indeed you have articulate,          |    |
| FTLN 2701 | Proclaimed at market crosses, read in churches,   |    |
| FTLN 2702 | To face the garment of rebellion                  | 75 |
| FTLN 2703 | With some fine color that may please the eye      |    |
| FTLN 2704 | Of fickle changelings and poor discontents,       |    |
| FTLN 2705 | Which gape and rub the elbow at the news          |    |
| FTLN 2706 | Of hurlyburly innovation.                         |    |
| FTLN 2707 | And never yet did insurrection want               | 80 |
| FTLN 2708 | Such water colors to impaint his cause,           |    |
| FTLN 2709 | Nor moody beggars starving for a time             |    |
| FTLN 2710 | Of pellmell havoc and confusion.                  |    |
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 2711 | In both your armies there is many a soul          |    |
| FTLN 2712 | Shall pay full dearly for this encounter          | 85 |
|           |   |    |

| EEE N. 0510            | If an as there is in in trial Tall wave menhaus  |     |
|------------------------|--|-----|
| FTLN 2714              | If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew,    |     |
| FTLN 2714              | The Prince of Wales doth join with all the world |     |
| FTLN 2715<br>FTLN 2716 | In praise of Henry Percy. By my hopes,           |     |
|                        | This present enterprise set off his head,        | 00  |
| FTLN 2717              | I do not think a braver gentleman,               | 90  |
| FTLN 2718              | More active-valiant, or more valiant-young,      |     |
| FTLN 2719              | More daring or more bold, is now alive           |     |
| FTLN 2720              | To grace this latter age with noble deeds.       |     |
| FTLN 2721              | For my part, I may speak it to my shame,         | 0.5 |
| FTLN 2722              | I have a truant been to chivalry,                | 95  |
| FTLN 2723              | And so I hear he doth account me too.            |     |
| FTLN 2724              | Yet this before my father's majesty:             |     |
| FTLN 2725              | I am content that he shall take the odds         |     |
| FTLN 2726              | Of his great name and estimation,                | 100 |
| FTLN 2727              | And will, to save the blood on either side,      | 100 |
| FTLN 2728              | Try fortune with him in a single fight.          |     |
|                        | KING   |     |
| FTLN 2729              | And, Prince of Wales, so dare we venture thee,   |     |
| FTLN 2730              | Albeit considerations infinite                   |     |
| FTLN 2731              | Do make against it.—No, good Worcester, no.      |     |
| FTLN 2732              | We love our people well, even those we love      | 105 |
| FTLN 2733              | That are misled upon your cousin's part.         |     |
| FTLN 2734              | And, will they take the offer of our grace,      |     |
| FTLN 2735              | Both he and they and you, yea, every man         |     |
| FTLN 2736              | Shall be my friend again, and I'll be his.       |     |
| FTLN 2737              | So tell your cousin, and bring me word           | 110 |
| FTLN 2738              | What he will do. But if he will not yield,       |     |
| FTLN 2739              | Rebuke and dread correction wait on us,          |     |
| FTLN 2740              | And they shall do their office. So begone.       |     |
| FTLN 2741              | We will not now be troubled with reply.          |     |
| FTLN 2742              | We offer fair. Take it advisedly.                | 115 |
|                        | Worcester exits [with Vernon.]                   |     |
|                        | PRINCE   |     |
| FTLN 2743              | It will not be accepted, on my life.             |     |
| FTLN 2744              | The Douglas and the Hotspur both together        |     |
| FTLN 2745              | Are confident against the world in arms.         |     |
|                        |  |     |

|           | KING   |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 2746 | Hence, therefore, every leader to his charge,              |     |
| FTLN 2747 | For on their answer will we set on them,                   | 120 |
| FTLN 2748 | And God befriend us as our cause is just.                  |     |
|           | They exit. Prince and Falstaff remain.                     |     |
| FTLN 2749 | FALSTAFF Hal, if thou see me down in the battle and        |     |
| FTLN 2750 | bestride me, so; 'tis a point of friendship.               |     |
| FTLN 2751 | PRINCE Nothing but a colossus can do thee that friendship. |     |
| FTLN 2752 | Say thy prayers, and farewell.                             | 125 |
| FTLN 2753 | FALSTAFF I would 'twere bedtime, Hal, and all well.        |     |
| FTLN 2754 | PRINCE Why, thou owest God a death.   The exits.           |     |
| FTLN 2755 | FALSTAFF 'Tis not due yet. I would be loath to pay Him     |     |
| FTLN 2756 | before His day. What need I be so forward with             |     |
| FTLN 2757 | Him that calls not on me? Well, 'tis no matter.            | 130 |
| FTLN 2758 | Honor pricks me on. Yea, but how if honor prick me         |     |
| FTLN 2759 | off when I come on? How then? Can honor set to a           |     |
| FTLN 2760 | leg? No. Or an arm? No. Or take away the grief of a        |     |
| FTLN 2761 | wound? No. Honor hath no skill in surgery, then?           |     |
| FTLN 2762 | No. What is honor? A word. What is in that word            | 135 |
| FTLN 2763 | "honor"? What is that "honor"? Air. A trim reckoning.      |     |
| FTLN 2764 | Who hath it? He that died o' Wednesday. Doth               |     |
| FTLN 2765 | he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. 'Tis insensible,      |     |
| FTLN 2766 | then? Yea, to the dead. But will fit not live with the     |     |
| FTLN 2767 | living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer it. Therefore, | 140 |
| FTLN 2768 | I'll none of it. Honor is a mere scutcheon. And            |     |
| FTLN 2769 | so ends my catechism.                                      |     |
|           | He exits.  |     |

## Scene 2 Enter Worcester and Sir Richard Vernon.

### WORCESTER

FTLN 2770 FTLN 2771 O no, my nephew must not know, Sir Richard, The liberal and kind offer of the King.

|           | VERNON   |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| FTLN 2772 | 'Twere best he did.                              |     |
| FTLN 2773 | WORCESTER Then are we all \( \sum \) undone.     |     |
| FTLN 2774 | It is not possible, it cannot be                 | 5   |
| FTLN 2775 | The King should keep his word in loving us.      |     |
| FTLN 2776 | He will suspect us still and find a time         |     |
| FTLN 2777 | To punish this offense in other faults.          |     |
| FTLN 2778 | Suspicion all our lives shall be stuck full of   |     |
| FTLN 2779 | eyes,  | 10  |
| FTLN 2780 | For treason is but trusted like the fox,         |     |
| FTLN 2781 | Who, never so tame, so cherished and locked up,  |     |
| FTLN 2782 | Will have a wild trick of his ancestors.         |     |
| FTLN 2783 | Look how we can, or sad or merrily,              |     |
| FTLN 2784 | Interpretation will misquote our looks,          | 15  |
| FTLN 2785 | And we shall feed like oxen at a stall,          |     |
| FTLN 2786 | The better cherished still the nearer death.     |     |
| FTLN 2787 | My nephew's trespass may be well forgot;         |     |
| FTLN 2788 | It hath the excuse of youth and heat of blood,   |     |
| FTLN 2789 | And an adopted name of privilege—                | 20  |
| FTLN 2790 | A harebrained Hotspur governed by a spleen.      |     |
| FTLN 2791 | All his offenses live upon my head               |     |
| FTLN 2792 | And on his father's. We did train him on,        |     |
| FTLN 2793 | And his corruption being ta'en from us,          |     |
| FTLN 2794 | We as the spring of all shall pay for all.       | 25  |
| FTLN 2795 | Therefore, good cousin, let not Harry know       |     |
| FTLN 2796 | In any case the offer of the King.               |     |
|           | VERNON   |     |
| FTLN 2797 | Deliver what you will; I'll say 'tis so.         |     |
|           | Enter 「Hotspur, Douglas, and their army.         |     |
|           |  |     |
| FTLN 2798 | Here comes your cousin.                          | 2.0 |
| FTLN 2799 | HOTSPUR, <i>to Douglas</i> My uncle is returned. | 30  |
| FTLN 2800 | Deliver up my Lord of Westmoreland.—             |     |
| FTLN 2801 | Uncle, what news?                                |     |
|           | WORCESTER  |     |
| FTLN 2802 | The King will bid you battle presently.          |     |
|           |  |     |

|           | DOUGLAS, \[\tau_{to}\] Hotspur\[\textsquare\]                   |            |
|-----------|---|------------|
| FTLN 2803 | Defy him by the Lord of Westmoreland.                           |            |
|           | HOTSPUR   |            |
| FTLN 2804 | Lord Douglas, go you and tell him so.                           | 35         |
|           | DOUGLAS   |            |
| FTLN 2805 | Marry, and shall, and very willingly. Douglas exits.  WORCESTER |            |
| FTLN 2806 | There is no seeming mercy in the King.                          |            |
|           | HOTSPUR   |            |
| FTLN 2807 | Did you beg any? God forbid!                                    |            |
|           | WORCESTER   |            |
| FTLN 2808 | I told him gently of our grievances,                            |            |
| FTLN 2809 | Of his oath-breaking, which he mended thus                      | 40         |
| FTLN 2810 | By now forswearing that he is forsworn.                         |            |
| FTLN 2811 | He calls us "rebels," "traitors," and will scourge              |            |
| FTLN 2812 | With haughty arms this hateful name in us.                      |            |
|           |   |            |
|           | Enter Douglas.  |            |
|           |   |            |
|           | DOUGLAS   |            |
| FTLN 2813 | Arm, gentlemen, to arms. For I have thrown                      |            |
| FTLN 2814 | A brave defiance in King Henry's teeth,                         | 45         |
| FTLN 2815 | And Westmoreland, that was engaged, did bear it,                |            |
| FTLN 2816 | Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on.                   |            |
|           | WORCESTER   |            |
| FTLN 2817 | The Prince of Wales stepped forth before the King,              |            |
| FTLN 2818 | And, nephew, challenged you to single fight.                    |            |
|           | HOTSPUR   | <b>5</b> 0 |
| FTLN 2819 | O, would the quarrel lay upon our heads,                        | 50         |
| FTLN 2820 | And that no man might draw short breath today                   |            |
| FTLN 2821 | But I and Harry Monmouth! Tell me, tell me,                     |            |
| FTLN 2822 | How showed his tasking? Seemed it in contempt?                  |            |
|           | VERNON  |            |
| FTLN 2823 | No, by my soul. I never in my life                              | <i>-</i> - |
| FTLN 2824 | Did hear a challenge urged more modestly,                       | 55         |
| FTLN 2825 | Unless a brother should a brother dare                          |            |
| FTLN 2826 | To gentle exercise and proof of arms.                           |            |
|           |   |            |

ACT 5. SC. 2

| FTLN 2827 | He gave you all the duties of a man,            |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2828 | Trimmed up your praises with a princely tongue, |    |
| FTLN 2829 | Spoke your deservings like a chronicle,         | 60 |
| FTLN 2830 | Making you ever better than his praise          |    |
| FTLN 2831 | By still dispraising praise valued with you,    |    |
| FTLN 2832 | And, which became him like a prince indeed,     |    |
| FTLN 2833 | He made a blushing cital of himself,            |    |
| FTLN 2834 | And chid his truant youth with such a grace     | 65 |
| FTLN 2835 | As if he mastered there a double spirit         |    |
| FTLN 2836 | Of teaching and of learning instantly.          |    |
| FTLN 2837 | There did he pause, but let me tell the world:  |    |
| FTLN 2838 | If he outlive the envy of this day,             |    |
| FTLN 2839 | England did never owe so sweet a hope           | 70 |
| FTLN 2840 | So much misconstrued in his wantonness.         |    |
|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
| FTLN 2841 | Cousin, I think thou art enamorèd               |    |
| FTLN 2842 | On his follies. Never did I hear                |    |
| FTLN 2843 | Of any prince so wild a liberty.                |    |
| FTLN 2844 | But be he as he will, yet once ere night        | 75 |
| FTLN 2845 | I will embrace him with a soldier's arm         |    |
| FTLN 2846 | That he shall shrink under my courtesy.—        |    |
| FTLN 2847 | Arm, arm with speed, and, fellows, soldiers,    |    |
| FTLN 2848 | friends,  |    |
| FTLN 2849 | Better consider what you have to do             | 80 |
| FTLN 2850 | Than I that have not well the gift of tongue    |    |
| FTLN 2851 | Can lift your blood up with persuasion.         |    |
|           |   |    |
|           | Enter a Messenger.                              |    |
| FTLN 2852 | MESSENGER My lord, here are letters for you.    |    |
| FTLN 2853 | HOTSPUR I cannot read them now.—                |    |
| FTLN 2854 | O gentlemen, the time of life is short;         | 85 |
| FTLN 2855 | To spend that shortness basely were too long    |    |
| FTLN 2856 | If life did ride upon a dial's point,           |    |
| FTLN 2857 | Still ending at the arrival of an hour.         |    |
| FTLN 2858 | An if we live, we live to tread on kings;       |    |
| FTLN 2859 | If die, brave death, when princes die with us.  | 90 |
|           | •   |    |

95

5

203 FTLN 2860 FTLN 2861 SECOND MESSENGER FTLN 2862 **HOTSPUR** FTLN 2863 FTLN 2864 FTLN 2865 Whose temper I intend to stain FTLN 2866 FTLN 2867 In the adventure of this perilous day. FTLN 2868 FTLN 2869 FTLN 2870 FTLN 2871 FTLN 2872 FTLN 2873

Now, for our consciences, the arms are fair When the intent of bearing them is just.

## Enter another [Messenger.]

My lord, prepare. The King comes on apace.

I thank him that he cuts me from my tale, For I profess not talking. Only this: Let each man do his best. And here draw I a sword,

With the best blood that I can meet withal

Now, Esperance! Percy! And set on. 100

Sound all the lofty instruments of war, And by that music let us all embrace,

For, heaven to Earth, some of us never shall

A second time do such a courtesy.

Here they embrace. The trumpets sound. They exit.

## Scene 3

The King enters with his power, \( \screen{crosses} \) the stage and exits. Alarum to the battle. Then enter Douglas, and Sir 

BLUNT, [as King]

FTLN 2874

FTLN 2875

FTLN 2876

FTLN 2877

FTLN 2878

FTLN 2879

FTLN 2880

What is thy name that in Tthe battle thus Thou crossest me? What honor dost thou seek Upon my head?

**DOUGLAS** Know then my name is Douglas, And I do haunt thee in the battle thus

Because some tell me that thou art a king.

BLUNT, [as King] They tell thee true.

| Henry | <i>117</i> | Dant | 1 |
|-------|------------|------|---|
| пепт  | IV.        | Part | 1 |

ACT 5. SC. 3

205

| FTLN 2881<br>FTLN 2882<br>FTLN 2883<br>FTLN 2884 | The Lord of Stafford dear today hath bought Thy likeness, for instead of thee, King Harry, This sword hath ended him. So shall it thee, Unless thou yield thee as my prisoner. | 10 |
|--|--|----|
| FTLN 2885  | BLUNT, [as King] I was not born a yielder, thou proud Scot,  |    |
| FTLN 2886  | And thou shalt find a king that will revenge   |    |
| FTLN 2887  | Lord Stafford's death.   |    |
|  | They fight. Douglas kills Blunt.   |    |
|  | Then enter Hotspur.  |    |
|  | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 2888  | O Douglas, hadst thou fought at Holmedon thus,   | 15 |
| FTLN 2889  | I never had triumphed upon a Scot.   |    |
|  | DOUGLAS  |    |
| FTLN 2890  | All's done, all's won; here breathless lies the King.  |    |
| FTLN 2891  | HOTSPUR Where?   |    |
| FTLN 2892  | DOUGLAS Here.  |    |
|  | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 2893  | This, Douglas? No, I know this face full well.   | 20 |
| FTLN 2894  | A gallant knight he was; his name was Blunt,   |    |
| FTLN 2895  | Semblably furnished like the King himself.   |    |
|  | DOUGLAS, addressing Blunt's corpse   |    |
| FTLN 2896  | A fool go with thy soul whither it goes!   |    |
| FTLN 2897  | A borrowed title hast thou bought too dear.  |    |
| FTLN 2898  | Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king?  | 25 |
|  | HOTSPUR  |    |
| FTLN 2899  | The King hath many marching in his coats.  |    |
|  | DOUGLAS  |    |
| FTLN 2900  | Now, by my sword, I will kill all his coats.   |    |
| FTLN 2901  | I'll murder all his wardrobe, piece by piece,  |    |
| FTLN 2902  | Until I meet the King.   | 20 |
| FTLN 2903  | HOTSPUR Up and away!   | 30 |
| FTLN 2904  | Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day.  |    |
|  | They exit.   |    |

207

## Alarm. Enter Falstaff alone.

| FTLN 2905 | FALSTAFF Though I could 'scape shot-free at London,  |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 2906 | I fear the shot here. Here's no scoring but upon     |    |
| FTLN 2907 | the pate.—Soft, who are you? Sir Walter Blunt.       |    |
| FTLN 2908 | There's honor for you. Here's no vanity. I am as hot | 35 |
| FTLN 2909 | as molten lead, and as heavy too. God keep lead out  |    |
| FTLN 2910 | of me; I need no more weight than mine own           |    |
| FTLN 2911 | bowels. I have led my ragamuffins where they are     |    |
| FTLN 2912 | peppered. There's not three of my hundred and fifty  |    |
| FTLN 2913 | left alive, and they are for the town's end, to beg  | 40 |
| FTLN 2914 | during life. But who comes here?                     |    |
|           |  |    |

#### Enter the Prince.

|           | PRINCE   |    |
|-----------|--|----|
| FTLN 2915 | What, stand'st thou idle here? Lend me thy sword.      |    |
| FTLN 2916 | Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff                   |    |
| FTLN 2917 | Under the hoofs of vaunting enemies,                   |    |
| FTLN 2918 | Whose deaths are yet unrevenged. I prithee             | 45 |
| FTLN 2919 | Lend me thy sword.                                     |    |
| FTLN 2920 | FALSTAFF O Hal, I prithee give me leave to breathe     |    |
| FTLN 2921 | awhile. Turk Gregory never did such deeds in arms      |    |
| FTLN 2922 | as I have done this day. I have paid Percy; I have     |    |
| FTLN 2923 | made him sure.   | 50 |
|           | PRINCE   |    |
| FTLN 2924 | He is indeed, and living to kill thee.                 |    |
| FTLN 2925 | I prithee, lend me thy sword.                          |    |
| FTLN 2926 | FALSTAFF Nay, before God, Hal, if Percy be alive, thou |    |
| FTLN 2927 | gett'st not my sword; but take my pistol, if thou      |    |
| FTLN 2928 | wilt.  | 55 |

### PRINCE

FTLN 2929

FTLN 2930

FTLN 2931

Give it me. What, is it in the case?

FALSTAFF Ay, Hal, 'tis hot, 'tis hot. There's that will sack a city.

The Prince draws it out, and finds it to be a bottle of sack.

|           |   | ı  |
|-----------|---|----|
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 2932 | What, is it a time to jest and dally now?                   |    |
|           | He throws the bottle at him and exits.                      |    |
| FTLN 2933 | FALSTAFF Well, if Percy be alive, I'll pierce him. If he do | 60 |
| FTLN 2934 | come in my way, so; if he do not, if I come in his          |    |
| FTLN 2935 | willingly, let him make a carbonado of me. I like not       |    |
| FTLN 2936 | such grinning honor as Sir Walter hath. Give me             |    |
| FTLN 2937 | life, which, if I can save, so: if not, honor comes         |    |
| FTLN 2938 | unlooked for, and there's an end.                           | 65 |
| 1121(2)30 | The exits.  | 0. |
|           | TIE EAUS.   |    |
|           | 「Scene 47   |    |
|           | Alarm, excursions. Enter the King, the Prince, Lord John    |    |
|           | of Lancaster, \[ \text{and the} \] Earl of Westmoreland.    |    |
|           | of Euneuster, and the Euri of Westmoretand.                 |    |
|           | KING  |    |
| FTLN 2939 | I prithee, Harry, withdraw thyself. Thou bleedest           |    |
| FTLN 2940 | too much.   |    |
| FTLN 2941 | Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.                    |    |
|           | LANCASTER   |    |
| FTLN 2942 | Not I, my lord, unless I did bleed too.                     |    |
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 2943 | I beseech your Majesty, make up,                            | 5  |
| FTLN 2944 | Lest your retirement do amaze your friends.                 |    |
|           | KING  |    |
| FTLN 2945 | I will do so.—My Lord of Westmoreland,                      |    |
| FTLN 2946 | Lead him to his tent.                                       |    |
|           | WESTMORELAND  |    |
| FTLN 2947 | Come, my lord, I'll lead you to your tent.                  |    |
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 2948 | Lead me, my lord? I do not need your help,                  | 10 |
| FTLN 2949 | And God forbid a shallow scratch should drive               |    |
| FTLN 2950 | The Prince of Wales from such a field as this,              |    |
| FTLN 2951 | Where stained nobility lies trodden on,                     |    |
| FTLN 2952 | And rebels' arms triumph in massacres.                      |    |

| 211                                   | Henry IV, Part I                     | ACT 5. SC. 4 |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|--------------|
| LANCASTER                             |                                      |              |
| We breatl                             | he too long. Come, cousin Westm      | oreland.     |
|                                       | this way lies. For God's sake, con   |              |
|                                       | Lancaster and Wes                    |              |
| PRINCE                                |                                      |              |
| 955 By God, 1                         | thou hast deceived me, Lancaster.    |              |
| ,                                     | think thee lord of such a spirit.    |              |
|                                       | loved thee as a brother, John,       |              |
| · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · | I do respect thee as my soul.        |              |
| KING                                  | 1                                    |              |
| 959 I saw him                         | hold Lord Percy at the point         |              |
| 960 With lust                         | ier maintenance than I did look fo   | or           |
| Of such a                             | n ungrown warrior.                   |              |
| PRINCE                                |                                      |              |
| O, this bo                            | by lends mettle to us all.           | He exits.    |
| DOUGLAS                               | 「Enter Douglas. ¬                    |              |
|                                       | king! They grow like Hydra's hea     | de           |
|                                       | Douglas, fatal to all those          | us.—         |
|                                       | r those colors on them. What art t   | hou          |
|                                       | nterfeit'st the person of a king?    | iiou         |
| KING                                  | nerion of the person of the king.    |              |
|                                       | himself, who, Douglas, grieves a     | it heart.    |
| _                                     | of his shadows thou hast met         | ,            |
| _                                     | he very king. I have two boys        |              |
|                                       | ey and thyself about the field,      |              |
|                                       | ng thou fall'st on me so luckily,    |              |
| I will assa                           | ay thee. And defend thyself.         |              |
| DOUGLAS                               |                                      |              |
| I fear thou                           | u art another counterfeit,           |              |
| And yet,                              | in faith, thou bearest thee like a k | ing.         |
| But mine                              | I am sure thou art, whoe'er thou     | be,          |
| And thus                              | I win thee.                          |              |

They fight. The King being in danger, enter Prince of Wales.

|           | PRINCE  |    |
|-----------|---|----|
| FTLN 2977 | Hold up thy head, vile Scot, or thou art like           |    |
| FTLN 2978 | Never to hold it up again. The spirits                  | 40 |
| FTLN 2979 | Of valiant Shirley, Stafford, Blunt are in my arms.     |    |
| FTLN 2980 | It is the Prince of Wales that threatens thee,          |    |
| FTLN 2981 | Who never promiseth but he means to pay.                |    |
|           | They fight. Douglas flieth.                             |    |
| FTLN 2982 | <i>To King.</i> Cheerly, my lord. How fares your Grace? |    |
| FTLN 2983 | Sir Nicholas Gawsey hath for succor sent,               | 45 |
| FTLN 2984 | And so hath Clifton. I'll to Clifton straight.          |    |
| FTLN 2985 | KING Stay and breathe awhile.                           |    |
| FTLN 2986 | Thou hast redeemed thy lost opinion                     |    |
| FTLN 2987 | And showed thou mak'st some tender of my life           |    |
| FTLN 2988 | In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me.            | 50 |
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 2989 | O God, they did me too much injury                      |    |
| FTLN 2990 | That ever said I hearkened for your death.              |    |
| FTLN 2991 | If it were so, I might have let alone                   |    |
| FTLN 2992 | The insulting hand of Douglas over you,                 |    |
| FTLN 2993 | Which would have been as speedy in your end             | 55 |
| FTLN 2994 | As all the poisonous potions in the world,              |    |
| FTLN 2995 | And saved the treacherous labor of your son.            |    |
|           | KING  |    |
| FTLN 2996 | Make up to Clifton. I'll to Sir Nicholas Gawsey.        |    |
|           | King exits.   |    |
|           | Enter Hotspur.  |    |
|           | Emei Hoispur.   |    |
|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
| FTLN 2997 | If I mistake not, thou art Harry Monmouth.              |    |
|           | PRINCE  |    |
| FTLN 2998 | Thou speak'st as if I would deny my name.               | 60 |
|           | HOTSPUR   |    |
| FTLN 2999 | My name is Harry Percy.                                 |    |
| FTLN 3000 | PRINCE Why then I see                                   |    |
| FTLN 3001 | A very valiant rebel of the name.                       |    |
| FTLN 3002 | I am the Prince of Wales; and think not, Percy,         |    |
|           |   |    |

|             | 215                | Henry IV, Part I                       | ACT 5. SC. 4  |
|-------------|--------------------|--|---------------|
| FTLN 3003   | To share with me   | in glory any more.                     |               |
| TLN 3003    |                    | ot their motion in one sphe            | ore           |
| TLN 3005    | -                  | and brook a double reign               | л.,           |
| TLN 3006    | •                  | nd the Prince of Wales.                |               |
| 1 L1 ( 3000 | HOTSPUR            | id the Timee of Wales.                 |               |
| TLN 3007    | Nor shall it Ha    | rry, for the hour is come              |               |
| LN 3008     |                    | us, and would to God                   |               |
| TLN 3009    |                    | were now as great as mir               | ne            |
|             | PRINCE             | word now as grow as min                |               |
| ΓLN 3010    |                    | r ere I part from thee,                |               |
| TLN 3011    | _                  | ng honors on thy crest                 |               |
| ΓLN 3012    |                    | a garland for my head.                 |               |
|             | HOTSPUR            | S ,                                    |               |
| LN 3013     | I can no longer br | ook thy vanities.                      | They fight.   |
|             |                    | Enter Falstaff.                        |               |
| TLN 3014    | FALSTAFF Well said | d, Hal! To it, Hal! Nay, yo            | ou shall find |
| ΓLN 3015    |                    | ere, I can tell you.                   |               |
|             | Enter Douglas.     | He fighteth with Falstaff,             | 「who falls    |
|             |                    | ere dead. 「Douglas exits. <sup>™</sup> | •             |
|             | J                  | killeth Percy.                         |               |
|             | HOTSPUR            |  |               |
| TLN 3016    | O Harry, thou has  | t robbed me of my youth.               |               |
| LN 3017     | I better brook the |  |               |
| LN 3018     | Than those proud   | titles thou hast won of me             | 2.            |
| LN 3019     | -                  | houghts worse than thy sv              |               |
| LN 3020     | flesh.             | -                                      | -             |
| LN 3021     | But thoughts, the  | slaves of life, and life, tim          | ne's fool,    |
| N 3022      |                    | es survey of all the world             |               |
| LN 3023     | •                  | O, I could prophesy,                   |               |
| LN 3024     | -                  | and cold hand of death                 |               |
| LN 3025     | Lies on my tongue  | e. No, Percy, thou art dust            |               |
| LN 3026     | And food for—      |  | 「He dies. ॊ   |
|             | PRINCE             |  |               |

For worms, brave Percy. Fare thee well, great heart.

FTLN 3027

| FTLN 3028 | Ill-weaved ambition, how much art thou shrunk!          | 90  |
|-----------|---|-----|
| FTLN 3029 | When that this body did contain a spirit,               |     |
| FTLN 3030 | A kingdom for it was too small a bound,                 |     |
| FTLN 3031 | But now two paces of the vilest earth                   |     |
| FTLN 3032 | Is room enough. This earth that bears thee dead         |     |
| FTLN 3033 | Bears not alive so stout a gentleman.                   | 95  |
| FTLN 3034 | If thou wert sensible of courtesy,                      |     |
| FTLN 3035 | I should not make so dear a show of zeal.               |     |
| FTLN 3036 | But let my favors hide thy mangled face;                |     |
|           | THe covers Hotspur's face.                              |     |
| FTLN 3037 | And even in thy behalf I'll thank myself                |     |
| FTLN 3038 | For doing these fair rites of tenderness.               | 100 |
| FTLN 3039 | Adieu, and take thy praise with thee to heaven.         |     |
| FTLN 3040 | Thy ignominy sleep with thee in the grave,              |     |
| FTLN 3041 | But not remembered in thy epitaph.                      |     |
|           | He spieth Falstaff on the ground.                       |     |
| FTLN 3042 | What, old acquaintance, could not all this flesh        |     |
| FTLN 3043 | Keep in a little life? Poor Jack, farewell.             | 105 |
| FTLN 3044 | I could have better spared a better man.                |     |
| FTLN 3045 | O, I should have a heavy miss of thee                   |     |
| FTLN 3046 | If I were much in love with vanity.                     |     |
| FTLN 3047 | Death hath not struck so fat a deer today,              |     |
| FTLN 3048 | Though many dearer in this bloody fray.                 | 110 |
| FTLN 3049 | Emboweled will I see thee by and by;                    |     |
| FTLN 3050 | Till then in blood by noble Percy lie. He exits.        |     |
|           | Falstaff riseth up.                                     |     |
| FTLN 3051 | FALSTAFF Emboweled? If thou embowel me today, I'll      |     |
| FTLN 3052 | give you leave to powder me and eat me too              |     |
| FTLN 3053 | tomorrow. 'Sblood, 'twas time to counterfeit, or        | 115 |
| FTLN 3054 | that hot termagant Scot had paid me scot and lot        |     |
| FTLN 3055 | too. Counterfeit? I lie. I am no counterfeit. To die is |     |
| FTLN 3056 | to be a counterfeit, for he is but the counterfeit of a |     |
| FTLN 3057 | man who hath not the life of a man; but to counterfeit  |     |
| FTLN 3058 | dying when a man thereby liveth is to be no             | 120 |
| FTLN 3059 | counterfeit, but the true and perfect image of life     |     |
| FTLN 3060 | indeed. The better part of valor is discretion, in the  |     |
|           |   |     |

|      | _  |     |   |
|------|----|-----|---|
| ACT  | 5  | SC  | 4 |
| 1101 | J. | DC. | 7 |

| FTLN 3061<br>FTLN 3062<br>FTLN 3063<br>FTLN 3064<br>FTLN 3065<br>FTLN 3066<br>FTLN 3067<br>FTLN 3068 | which better part I have saved my life. Zounds, I am afraid of this gunpowder Percy, though he be dead. How if he should counterfeit too, and rise? By my faith, I am afraid he would prove the better counterfeit. Therefore I'll make him sure, yea, and I'll swear I killed him. Why may not he rise as well as I? Nothing confutes me but eyes, and nobody sees me. Therefore, sirrah, <code>stabbing him</code> with a new wound | 125<br>130 |
|--|---|------------|
| FTLN 3069  | in your thigh, come you along with me.  |            |
|  | He takes up Hotspur on his back.  |            |
|  | Enter Prince [and] John of Lancaster.   |            |
|  | PRINCE  |            |
| FTLN 3070  | Come, brother John. Full bravely hast thou fleshed  |            |
| FTLN 3071  | Thy maiden sword.   |            |
| FTLN 3072  | LANCASTER But soft, whom have we here?  |            |
| FTLN 3073  | Did you not tell me this fat man was dead?  | 135        |
| FTLN 3074  | PRINCE I did; I saw him dead,   |            |
| FTLN 3075  | Breathless and bleeding on the ground.—Art thou   |            |
| FTLN 3076  | alive?  |            |
| FTLN 3077  | Or is it fantasy that plays upon our eyesight?  | 1.40       |
| FTLN 3078  | I prithee, speak. We will not trust our eyes  | 140        |
| FTLN 3079  | Without our ears. Thou art not what thou seem'st.   |            |
| FTLN 3080  | FALSTAFF No, that's certain. I am not a double man.   |            |
| FTLN 3081  | But if I be not Jack Falstaff, then am I a jack. There  |            |
| FTLN 3082<br>FTLN 3083   | is Percy. If your father will do me any honor, so; if not, let him kill the next Percy himself. I look to be  | 145        |
| FTLN 3083  | either earl or duke, I can assure you.  | 143        |
| 1 1LN 3004   | PRINCE  |            |
| FTLN 3085  | Why, Percy I killed myself, and saw thee dead.  |            |
| FTLN 3086  | FALSTAFF Didst thou? Lord, Lord, how this world is  |            |
| FTLN 3087  | given to lying. I grant you, I was down and out of  |            |
| FTLN 3088  | breath, and so was he, but we rose both at an instant   | 150        |
| FTLN 3089  | and fought a long hour by Shrewsbury clock. If I  | 100        |
| FTLN 3090  | may be believed, so; if not, let them that should   |            |
| FTLN 3091  | reward valor bear the sin upon their own heads. I'll  |            |
|  | •   |            |
|  |   |            |

| ACT 5. SC. 5 |
|--------------|
|--------------|

|                        |  | • |
|------------------------|--|---|
|                        |  |   |
| FTLN 3092              | take it upon my death, I gave him this wound in  |   |
| FTLN 3093              | the thigh. If the man were alive and would deny  |   |
| FTLN 3094              | it, zounds, I would make him eat a piece of my   |   |
| FTLN 3095              | sword.   |   |
| ETT. 11 200 (          | LANCASTER This is the atrea post tole that area I heard  |   |
| FTLN 3096              | This is the strangest tale that ever I heard.  |   |
| ETI N. 2007            | PRINCE This is the strongest fellow, brother John  |   |
| FTLN 3097              | This is the strangest fellow, brother John.—   |   |
| FTLN 3098              | Come bring your luggage nobly on your back.  |   |
| FTLN 3099              | For my part, if a lie may do thee grace,   |   |
| FTLN 3100              | I'll gild it with the happiest terms I have.  A retreat is sounded.                                    |   |
| ETI N 2101             |  |   |
| FTLN 3101              | The trumpet sounds retreat; the day is Fours.  |   |
| FTLN 3102              | Come, brother, let us to the highest of the field  |   |
| FTLN 3103              | To see what friends are living, who are dead.  |   |
| FTLN 3104              | They exit.  FALSTAFF I'll follow, as they say, for reward. He that                                     |   |
| FTLN 3104<br>FTLN 3105 | FALSTAFF I'll follow, as they say, for reward. He that rewards me, God reward him. If I do grow great, |   |
| FTLN 3105<br>FTLN 3106 | I'll grow less, for I'll purge and leave sack and live   |   |
| FTLN 3100<br>FTLN 3107 | cleanly as a nobleman should do.   |   |
| TILN 3107              | He exits carrying Hotspur's body.  |   |
|                        | The exits "currying Hoispur's body."   |   |
|                        |  |   |
|                        | Scene 5  |   |
|                        | The trumpets sound. Enter the King, Prince of Wales,   |   |
|                        | Lord John of Lancaster, Earl of Westmoreland, with   |   |
|                        | Worcester and Vernon prisoners, [and Soldiers.]  |   |
|                        | KING   |   |
| FTLN 3108              | Thus ever did rebellion find rebuke.—  |   |
| FTLN 3109              | Ill-spirited Worcester, did not we send grace,   |   |
| FTLN 3110              | Pardon, and terms of love to all of you?   |   |
|                        | And wouldst thou turn our offers contrary,   |   |
| FTLN 3111              | •  |   |
| FTLN 3111<br>FTLN 3112 | Misuse the tenor of thy kinsman's trust?   |   |
|                        | Misuse the tenor of thy kinsman's trust? Three knights upon our party slain today,                     |   |

| 11010.00. |
|-----------|
|-----------|

|  | _  |
|--|--|
| Had been alive this hour                       |  |
| If, like a Christian, thou hadst truly borne   |  |
| Betwixt our armies true intelligence.          | 10   |
| WORCESTER                                      |  |
| What I have done my safety urged me to.        |  |
| And I embrace this fortune patiently,          |  |
| Since not to be avoided it falls on me.        |  |
| KING   |  |
| Bear Worcester to the death, and Vernon too.   |  |
| Other offenders we will pause upon.            | 15   |
| 「Worcester and Vernon exit, under guard.       |  |
| How goes the field?                            |  |
| PRINCE   |  |
| The noble Scot, Lord Douglas, when he saw      |  |
| The fortune of the day quite turned from him,  |  |
| The noble Percy slain, and all his men         |  |
| Upon the foot of fear, fled with the rest,     | 20   |
| And, falling from a hill, he was so bruised    |  |
| That the pursuers took him. At my tent         |  |
| The Douglas is, and I beseech your Grace       |  |
| I may dispose of him.                          |  |
| KING With all my heart.                        | 25   |
| PRINCE   |  |
| Then, brother John of Lancaster, to you        |  |
| This honorable bounty shall belong.            |  |
| Go to the Douglas and deliver him              |  |
| Up to his pleasure, ransomless and free.       |  |
| His valors shown upon our crests today         | 30   |
| Have taught us how to cherish such high deeds, |  |
| Even in the bosom of our adversaries.          |  |
| LANCASTER                                      |  |
| I thank your Grace for this high courtesy,     |  |
| Which I shall give away immediately.           |  |
| KING   |  |
| Then this remains, that we divide our power.   | 35   |
| You, son John, and my cousin Westmoreland,     |  |
|  |  |
|  | If, like a Christian, thou hadst truly borne Betwixt our armies true intelligence.  WORCESTER  What I have done my safety urged me to. And I embrace this fortune patiently, Since not to be avoided it falls on me.  KING  Bear Worcester to the death, and Vernon too. Other offenders we will pause upon.  **Worcester and Vernon exit, under guard.** How goes the field?  PRINCE  The noble Scot, Lord Douglas, when he saw The fortune of the day quite turned from him, The noble Percy slain, and all his men Upon the foot of fear, fled with the rest, And, falling from a hill, he was so bruised That the pursuers took him. At my tent The Douglas is, and I beseech your Grace I may dispose of him.  KING  With all my heart.  PRINCE  Then, brother John of Lancaster, to you This honorable bounty shall belong. Go to the Douglas and deliver him Up to his pleasure, ransomless and free. His valors shown upon our crests today Have taught us how to cherish such high deeds, Even in the bosom of our adversaries.  LANCASTER  I thank your Grace for this high courtesy, Which I shall give away immediately.  KING  Then this remains, that we divide our power. |

|   | 225   | Henry IV, Part I  | ACT 5. SC. 5 |    |
|---|---|---|--------------|----|
| FTLN 3144 FTLN 3145 FTLN 3146 FTLN 3147 FTLN 3148 FTLN 3149 FTLN 3150 | speed To meet No Who, as we Myself and To fight wit | ork shall bend you with your deares<br>rthumberland and the prelate Scroot<br>hear, are busily in arms.<br>you, son Harry, will towards Wale<br>h Glendower and the Earl of March<br>this land shall lose his sway, | op,<br>s     | 40 |
| FTLN 3151<br>FTLN 3152<br>FTLN 3153                                   | And since the                                       | check of such another day.  nis business so fair is done, eave till all our own be won.   |              | 45 |
|   |   |   | They exit.   |    |